



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

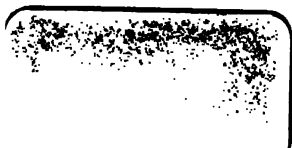
About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>





600084328V





THE
ETON FRENCH ACCIDENCE
AND
FIRST FRENCH EXERCISE BOOK,
WITH VOCABULARIES:

BY
HENRY TARVER,
BACHELIER ES-LETTRES,
FRENCH MASTER AT ETON COLLEGE.



ETON :
PUBLISHED BY E. P. WILLIAMS :
LONDON : SIMPKIN, MARSHALL, AND Co.

1865.

303. g. 18.

ETON : PRINTED BY E. P. WILLIAMS.

P R E F A C E.

This Book, compiled chiefly for the use of the Lower Forms at ETON, on the occasion of the addition of French to the programme of the Studies of that College, but equally serviceable for Beginners at any other School, contains, *1stly*. A review of all the French Parts of Speech, accounted for consecutively, illustrated by numerous instances and vocabularies, and declined or conjugated, if variable : *2ndly*. A copious supply of Exercises on the simplest constructions of the different Parts of Speech, compiled with the intention of teaching elementary correctness and accuracy in writing French.

The work does not extend to the Syntax, and the Exercises are not set to exemplify grammatical rules ; a few directions only being given upon some of them at the outset, concerning the simple treatment of Articles, Nouns, Adjectives, and Pronouns, which are occasionally referred to in the sequel.

The latter, and by far the greater, portion of the Exercises is on the Verbs. The innumerable mistakes made on this subject, in Examinations of all kinds, by Candidates for prizes, and Competitors for commissions and situations, are inconceivable. They contrast so strangely with the ability and knowledge displayed in the rest of the work of those examined, and detract so much from its merit, that it is evident that every opportunity

should be given and taken of gaining, by practice, a thorough acquaintance with the French Verbs. It should not only be acquired by Students at the commencement of their learning, but even those who are proficient in the study of French should frequently refresh their memories in this particular, by doing Exercises upon them ; and it is hoped that this Book will be found to contain the necessary materials for such practice ; *i. e.* an Accidence well exemplified, plenty of Verbs conjugated, and Exercises *en masse*.

The principle on which the Exercises are constructed is, that of leaving the pupil little to do but to write correctly the Part of Speech he is or has been engaged upon. In the earlier Exercises, on Articles, Nouns, and Adjectives, which can only admit of the simplest arrangement, this principle and its operation may be understood immediately by doing the Exercise ; but as, in proceeding, the Parts of Speech multiply, as Pronouns and Verbs are added, and the matter becomes more complicated, an explanation of the system becomes necessary.

The Verbs then, divided into conjugations, and subdivided into classes, are taken as the basis of all the Exercises, from No. 10 to the end. *Avoir* and *Être* each form a class ; and as very simple and complete sentences can be constructed with the help of these two Auxiliary Verbs, they are made a medium for the pupil to learn the Affirmative, Negative, and Interrogative Forms, and the mode in which Verbs are affected by their subjects, and govern their objects. The sentences on these Verbs, as on all that follow in the subsequent Exercises, are grouped according to the Moods and Tenses of the class to which the Verb in question belongs.

With Exercise 21 begin those on the conjugations, divided first into four large categories, *i. e.* Verbs in ER, IR, OIR, and RE; and these again into classes of Verbs alike in conjugation, each tense of these Verbs, according to their conjugations, forming other smaller collections of sentences, to be turned into French.

The pupil by this system is expected to be able infallibly, by proper reference to the head of the subject, the name of the tense, and the model Verb in the Accidence, or to the Dictionary, to give correctly the parts of the Verb of the conjugation on which he is writing his Exercise, and also to put in right order the accompanying words, if their construction be simple and already explained. When the construction is complex, that is, when the English and French would use a very different arrangement to express the same idea, the complex part of the sentence is re-arranged in such a manner as to be directly convertible into French, and in some instances the French is given. Certain Verbs employed in these indirect constructions are more largely dwelt upon than others, and the Exercises on them frequently referred to. Such are *falloir*, *devoir*, *pouvoir*, *vouloir*, and *faire*, used to translate into French English sentences requiring an indirect rendering or paraphrase. The greatest help of all, will probably however be the Dictionary at the end of the Book.

H. T.

ETON COLLEGE :

November 9th, 1865.



I N D E X.

TABLE DES MATIÈRES.

	Page.
ALPHABET AND PRONUNCIATION - - -	1 to 5
DIVISION OF PARTS OF SPEECH - - -	6
INVARIABLE PARTS OF SPEECH :	
Prepositions - - - - -	7
Adverbs - - - - -	7 and 170
Adverbial Constructions - - -	8
Conjunctions - - - - -	8 and 147
Interjections - - - - -	9
THE VARIABLE PARTS OF SPEECH :	
Articles, their denominations - - -	10
Definite Article, declined - - -	10
Partitive Article, declined - - -	11
Indefinite Article, declined - - -	11
NOUNS, THEIR PROPERTIES - - -	11
Formation of plural of Nouns and Adjectives - - -	12
Gender of French Nouns - - - - -	13 to 15
Declension of Nouns - - - - -	15
With Definite Article - - - - -	15
With Partitive Article - - - - -	16
With Indefinite Article - - - - -	16
Exercises on Nouns and Articles - - -	17
Proper Names - - - - -	18

	Page.
OF ADJECTIVES, AND THEIR PROPERTIES	19
Of French Adjectives	19
Feminines of Adjectives	20
A list of qualifying Adjectives	21
Indefinite Adjectives	21
Numerals	22
Degrees of Comparison	23 and 28
Agreement of Noun and Adjective	24 to 26
Possessives	26
Demonstrative Adjectives	27
Relative, Admirative, and Interrogative Adjectives	27
Degrees of Comparison exemplified	28
PRONOUNS, THEIR PROPERTIES	29
Personal Pronouns	29
Possessive Pronouns	29
Demonstrative Pronouns	30
Relative Pronouns	30
THE VERB—ITS NATURE	31
The French Auxiliaries	32
The termination of French Infinitives	32
AVOIR CONJUGATED	33 to 39
Exemplification of Affirmative, Negative, Restrictive, and Interrogative Forms	217 to 220
Peculiar use of <i>Avoir</i>	225
Compound Forms of Verbs	39
ÊTRE	41 to 47
Exemplifications of construction with <i>Être</i>	226, 227
Use of the Imperative	231
Of Verbs Regular and Verbs Irregular	47
Derivation of Tenses	47
Of Primitive and Secondary parts of Verbs	48
Of the Nature of Pronominal or Reflexive Verbs	48
Of Verbs taking the Auxiliary <i>Être</i> for <i>Avoir</i>	48

	Page.
THE VERBS IN ER :	
Donner - - - - -	49
Reflective Verbs Conjugated - - - - -	54 to 58, 81, 95, 105
<i>Entrer</i> , and Verbs of <i>coming</i> and <i>going</i> - - - - -	58
Irregularities of the First Conjugation - - - - -	59
Aller - - - - -	63
Envoyer - - - - -	65
THE VERBS IN IR :	
Finir, &c. - - - - -	66
Sentir, &c. - - - - -	68
Venir, Tenir - - - - -	71, 72
Cueillir - - - - -	72
Courir - - - - -	74
Offrir, &c. - - - - -	75
Mourir - - - - -	77
THE VERBS IN OIR :	
Recevoir, &c. - - - - -	79
Devoir, and its powers - - - - -	80
S'asseoir - - - - -	81
Valoir - - - - -	83
Vouloir - - - - -	85
Voir - - - - -	87
Pouvoir - - - - -	88
The powers of Pouvoir - - - - -	90
Savoir - - - - -	91
Falloir - - - - -	93
Il faut, as Auxiliary - - - - -	93
THE VERBS IN RE :	
Rendre, &c. - - - - -	94
Se battre - - - - -	96
Prendre - - - - -	98
Mettre - - - - -	100
Craindre, &c. - - - - -	102

	Page.
<i>Verbs in RE Continued :</i>	
Se plaindre	105
Connaître, &c.	107
Dire	109
Lire	111
Suffire	113
Rire	115
Écrire	117
Croire	119
Boire	121
Conduire, &c.	123
Faire	126
Vivre	128
Coudre	130
Moudre	132
Vaincre	134

EXERCISES.

Exercises on the Definite Article	137
——— on the Partitive Article	138
——— on the Indefinite Article	139, 149
Plurals	139
Agreement of Noun and Adjective	139 to 142
Comparisons	142
On Avoir	143, 144
On Interrogative sentences	144
Place of Personal Pronouns in a sentence	145, 148, 165
Disjunctives	153
On the Subjunctive	147
On the Imperative	148, 165
Omission of Indefinite Article	149
On the Pronoun <i>ce</i> with Être	150, 226
EXERCISES ON THE FIRST CONJUGATION	151 to 157
On the agreement of the Past Participle	154, 155
On the Verb LAISSER	155
On Pronominal or Reflective Verbs	155

	Page.
EXERCISES ON VERBS IN <i>IR</i>	157 to 166
EXERCISES ON VERBS IN <i>OIR</i>	166 to 179
Devoir, as Auxiliary-	167, &c.
Falloir, il faut, &c.	168, 169, 171, 173
Vouloir	168, &c.
Pouvoir	167, 171, 173, 176, 178
EXERCISES ON VERBS IN <i>RE</i>	181 to 216
Rendre, &c.	180
Prendre	184
Craindre, &c.	186
Connaître, &c.	188
Conduire, &c.	191
Mettre	193
Écrire	196
Dire	198
Lire	200
Faire	202
On Faire, with Infinitives	205 to 207
On Faire, governing Nouns without the Article	207
Faire, <i>to pretend</i>	208
Plaire	208
Croire	209
Boire	211
Suivre	213
Vivre	214
Conclure	216
A VOCABULARY FOR LEARNING BY HEART	217
On Avoir affirmative	217
On Negatives	218
On Restrictives	219
On Interrogatives	219
On ÊTRE in all ways-	221 to 223
Peculiar Phrases on AVOIR	225
Imperative of AVOIR	225
Imperative of ÊTRE	226
Imperative of <i>ce</i> with ÊTRE	226
On all Conjugations with Nouns, Adjectives, and Pronouns	228 to 234
Reflectives	230
Warnings	233
A DICTIONARY OF ENGLISH WORDS USED IN THE EXERCISES	225 to the End.

E R R A T A.

<i>Page</i>	<i>Line</i>	<i>Pro</i>	<i>Lege</i>
15	15	<i>Ambassador</i>	<i>Ambassadeur</i>
16	36	d'enfant	d'enfants
30	5	celui-la, celle-la	celui-là, celle-là
70	8	servu	servir
80	17	j'ai aperçus	j'ai aperçu
96	7	ascendu	descendu
"	8	romprant	rompant
"	10	Verbs	A verb
150	23	let the man read	let the man be ready
159	7	venir, &c. followed by an infinitive	venir, to have just, followed by prep. <i>de</i> and <i>au</i> , infini- tive
204	8	think	I think
212	17	Beaumunoir	Beaumanoir
220	41	chapeurs	chasseurs
236	30	an, as, a	as, a, an
"	40	suffisant	suffisant.

AN ACCIDENCE OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE.

The Alphabet.

The letters are *A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, J, K, L, M, N, O, P, Q, R, S, T, U, V, W, X, Y, Z*; as in English. The pronunciation of them is different. They are called *Ah, Bay, Say, Day, Ay, Ef, Jay, Ash, Ee, Ji, Kah, El, Em, En, O, Pay, Kue, Air, Ess, Tay, U, Vay, double Vay, Ix, Ygrec, Zed*. *G, J, Q, U*, having no equivalent sound in English pronunciation, must be learned from imitation.

The Vowels are *A, E, I, O, U*; the others are consonants. Most of these letters have more than one sound, being differently affected by the letters they are joined to; thus—

A has a broad sound (*Ah!*) in the words *Ane, Gras*; and a sharp sound in the words *Attention, Fat, Cap*.

B has no variety of sounds.

C is soft, like *s* in the English word *sing*, before *e* and *i*; and hard, like *k*, before *a, o, u*.

D, commencing a word or syllable, has no variety of sounds, except at the endings *and, end, ond*, when it adopts the sound of *t* if followed by a word beginning with a vowel, or an inaspirate *h*: *Un grand animal; Le second arbre; Le grand homme; M'entend-il?* As a final, *d* is mute.

E has three sounds, and is differently marked, to shew the difference of sound; thus;—

e, *muet*, (mute); *é, fermé*, (acute, closed); *è, ouvert*, (open or broad); *ê, circonflexe*, (broader).

The mute *e* has hardly any more sound than the *e* at the end of the English words *Rose*, *Age*; indeed, *Rose* in English, and *Rose* in French, have the same sound. The French mute *e* gives, however, the value of a syllable; the French *Rose* and *Age* being dissyllables. Many French monosyllables end in *e*, as, *Ce*, *De*, *Le*, *Me*, *Ne*, *Se*, *Je*, *Que*, whose sounds are to be learnt by imitation.

Ê has the sharp sound of the English *a* in *baby*, *baker*.

È has the same sound, pronounced with the mouth more open.

Ê the same sound still broader. These distinctions can only be learnt by imitation.

F, initial, as in English: the final *f* sometimes mute, (*clef*, *cerf*,) though generally sounded as the initial.

G has the softened sound of the English *g*, before the letters *e*, *i*, and *y*: the tongue is not raised to the palate to pronounce it: it has a hard sound before all other letters.

H is sometimes aspirated, but only slightly, affecting more the letter that precedes it than itself. It is most generally mute, and then the word preceding it stands as before a vowel.

I has the sharp sound of the English *e* in *evil*.

J always has a soft sound.

L has the same sound as the English *l*, unless liquified by the letter *i*.

M as in English, excepting in nasal terminations.

N as in English, excepting in nasal terminations.

O has two sounds,—a short sound, as in the English word *not*; and a broader sound, as in the English word *tone*.

P sounded as in English, unless when mute as a final.

Q has the hard sound of *k*, as a final. As an initial letter, it must be followed by *u*, to acquire a sound. *Qu* sounds like *k*.

R has a ruffled sound, as the *r* in *ram* in English. It is often silent as a final.

S, as an initial, has the same sound as in English. In the body of a word, if between vowels, or at the end of a word if the following one begins with a vowel, it has the sound of *z*. It is silent, as a final.

T has the same sound as in English, as an initial. Frequently silent at the end of a word.

U has a sound that can only be learnt by imitation.

V invariably as in English.

W has a sound of *v*.

X, as an initial, and in the body of a word, has the same sound as in English : as a final, it is sounded often as *ce*, but generally silent. It has the sound of *z*, if the following word begins with a vowel.

Y, between consonants, has the sound of *i* : if following a vowel, has generally the sound of two *i*'s.

Z, as an initial, has the same sound as in English : it is often silent, as a final.

Vowel Sounds.

Combinations of Letters.

Like **E** are sounded *eu*, *œu*, *eue*, and certain terminations of parts of verbs, *ent*.

Like **Ê** are sounded *ai*, *ei*, *ez*, *er*, *és*, *ed*.

Like **Ë** *ais*, *ait*, *aient*, *es*, *ès*, *ets*, *êts*, *egs*, *eis*, *aits*, *aids*.

Like **O**, *au*, *co*, *eau*.

Nasal Sounds.

M or **N**, following a vowel at the end of a word or syllable, give a smothered sound to the syllable.

AM, **AN**, **EM**, **EN**, *aen*, *aon*, *ent*, *ang*, *anc*, *end*, *ent*, *and*; *end*, are sounded alike.

IM, IN, *aim, ain, eim, ein, ins, int, aims, eins, ints, aint, eint*, are sounded alike.

OM, ON, *oms, ons, ont, onts, eon, eons*, are sounded alike.

UM, UN, *ums, unt, unt, eum, eum, euns*, are sounded alike.

Exceptional Nasal Pronunciations.

The EN in *mentor, memento, examen, appendice, agenda, Benjamin, Bengale, Bengalis, chien, mien, rien, viens, vient, sien*, is sounded as *in*.

The EN in *amen, abdomen, hymen*, is sounded *ène*.

The IMs in *Rheims* is sounded as *ince* would be.

Ch is pronounced as *sh* in English.

Th is pronounced like *t*.

Gn has a liquid sound like *ny* would have in English, if followed by a vowel.

The Accents.

French vowels are frequently marked by signs called *accents*—

(*´*) the acute, (*l'accent aigu*); (*`*) the grave, (*l'accent grave*); (*ˆ*) the circumflex, (*l'accent circonflexe*).

These signs generally indicate a difference of sound; sometimes they only distinguish one monosyllable from another, as in the case of the preposition *à*, to, at; of the adverbs *où*, where, and *là*, there; the grave accent is used here to distinguish these words from *a*, the verb (has); *ou*, the conjunction (or); *la*, the article and pronoun (the, her, it.)

The three accents may be met with on the letter *e*, which, as has been already explained, has four sounds, according as it is unaccented, or accented by either of the three accents.

The acute is met with only on the letter *e*. The circumflex, which may be met with on any vowel, indicates some change, some fact in the history of the word in which it is found. On the letters *a* and *o*, the circumflex alters the sound of the letter.

The Apostrophe.

The apostrophe (') is used in French to elide certain vowels in monosyllables, before a vowel at the beginning of the following word. The vowel most generally replaced by the apostrophe is *e*. The *a* is only elided in the pronoun and article *la*, and *i* in the conjunction *si*, before another *i*.

The Cedilla, (Cédille.)

The Cedilla, a small sign only met with beneath the letter *c*, thus (ç), shows that *c* is to have the soft sound of *s*, before the letters *a*, *o*, *u*.

THE ACCIDENCE, OR ELEMENTS OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE.

I. The French Language has the same parts of Speech as the English, with the addition of the Particle. These parts of Speech are :—The Article (*l'article ;*) the Noun Substantive (*le nom substantif ;*) the Adjective (*l'adjectif ;*) the Pronoun (*le pronom ;*) the Verb (*le Verbe ;*) the Participle (*le participe ;*) the Adverb (*l'adverbe ;*) the Preposition (*la préposition ;*) the Conjunction (*la conjunction ;*) the Interjection (*l'interjection ;*) the Particle (*la particule*).

II. Of these, the Articles, the Pronouns, the Prepositions, the Particles are *limited* ; that is, they admit of no addition. The Nouns, the Adjectives, the Verbs, and consequently the Participles, Adverbs, and Conjunctions, many of which are derived from other parts of Speech, are *unlimited* ; that is, they are very numerous, and are capable of increase.

III. The Articles, Nouns, Adjectives, Pronouns, Verbs, and Participles are *variable* ; that is, their forms, especially the terminations, alter. Adverbs, Prepositions, Conjunctions, Interjections, Particles, are *invariable*.

The invariable parts of Speech, being simple and easy of comprehension, may be illustrated at once.

THE INVARIABLE PARTS OF SPEECH.

Prepositions.

IV. Prepositions govern other parts of Speech. They are numerous, and the following are the principal :—

<i>A</i> , to, at	} these help in the declension of the Article.	
<i>De</i> , of, from		
<i>Avec</i> , with		<i>Vers</i> , towards
<i>Sans</i> , without		<i>Entre</i> , between
<i>Pour</i> , for		<i>Parmi</i> , amongst
<i>Contre</i> , against		<i>Pendant</i> , during
<i>Par</i> , by		<i>Devant</i> , before
<i>Avant</i> , before		<i>Derrière</i> , behind
<i>Après</i> , after		<i>Chez</i> , at the house of
<i>Dans</i> , in		<i>Depuis</i> , since
<i>Hors</i> , out of		<i>Malgré</i> , in spite of
<i>En</i> , in		<i>Outre</i> , besides
<i>Près</i> , near		<i>Selon</i> , according to
<i>Sur</i> , on		<i>Comme</i> , like.
<i>Sous</i> , under		

Adverbs.

V. Adverbs add force to another word, expressed or understood. They may be used alone, or with other words. A list of some Adverbs :—

<i>Toujours</i> , always	<i>Nullement</i> , not at all
<i>Jamais</i> , never	<i>Vraiment</i> , really
<i>Quand</i> , when	<i>Comment</i> ? ! how ?
<i>Maintenant</i> , now	<i>Où</i> , where
<i>Peu</i> , little	<i>Ici</i> , here
<i>Beaucoup</i> , much	<i>Là</i> , there
<i>Assez</i> , enough	<i>Partout</i> , everywhere
<i>Trop</i> , too much	<i>Loin</i> , far
<i>Alors</i> , then	<i>Auprès</i> , near
<i>Après</i> , afterwards	<i>Dedans</i> , within
<i>Bien</i> , well	<i>Dehors</i> , outside
<i>Mal</i> , badly	<i>Dessus</i> , on the top
<i>Mieux</i> , better	<i>Dessous</i> , beneath
<i>Pis</i> , worse	<i>Devant</i> , before
<i>Moins</i> , less	<i>Derrière</i> , behind
<i>Pourquoi</i> ? why ?	<i>Ailleurs</i> , elsewhere
<i>Plus</i> , more	<i>Nullepart</i> , nowhere
<i>Davantage</i> , more	<i>Combien</i> ? how much

<i>Oui</i> , yes	<i>Tant</i> , so much
<i>Non</i> , no	<i>Comme</i> , as
<i>Volontiers</i> , willingly	<i>Aussi</i> , also.

Some adverbial constructions.

<i>D'abord</i> , at first	<i>Là haut</i> , above,
<i>Tout à coup</i> , suddenly	<i>À côté</i> , aside, next door
<i>Tout d'un coup</i> , all at once	<i>De côté</i> , beside, sideways
<i>Tout à l'heure</i> , directly	<i>Au hasard</i> , at random
<i>Sans doute</i> , of course	<i>À merveille</i> , capital
<i>En vérité</i> , really	<i>À peine</i> , scarcely
<i>À la vérité</i> , in point of fact	<i>À peu près</i> , nearly
<i>Jusque là</i> , so far	<i>À regret</i> , reluctantly
<i>À la bonne heure</i> , well and good	<i>À contre cœur</i> , unwillingly
<i>À couvert</i> , under cover	<i>À propos</i> , by the by, seasonably
<i>À droite</i> , to the right	<i>À toute force</i> , at any cost
<i>À gauche</i> , to the left	<i>À présent</i> , now
<i>Par hasard</i> , by chance	<i>À tort</i> , wrongly
<i>Là bas</i> , yonder	<i>À tort et à travers</i> , anyhow.

Conjunctions.

VI. Conjunctions establish a connection between words or portions of sentences, expressing a thought, a judgment, an opinion.

VII. Conjunctions in French are either simple, and then limited as to number ; or formed by a combination of words, constructible at will, and thus unlimited.

VIII. Many locutions, not conjunctions by nature, become so by position.

IX. Conjunctions are copulative ; as—

<i>Et</i> , and	<i>Que</i> , as, than
<i>Ni</i> , nor	<i>Comme</i> , as.
<i>Aussi</i> , as, so	

Alternative ; as—

Ou, either, or.

Adverse ; as—

<i>Mais</i> , but	<i>Pourtant</i> , yet, however
<i>Cependant</i> , yet, still	<i>Bien que</i> , for all that.
<i>Néanmoins</i> , nevertheless	

Restrictive ; as—

Quoique, although
Pour que, so that
Afin que, in order that

Encore que, notwithstanding that
A moins que, unless.

Conditional ; as—

Si, if
Quand, when

Pourvu que, provided
Quand même, even if.

Interjections.

X. Interjections are chiefly exclamatory sounds, expressing astonishment or admiration ; as—

Ah ! Ha ! Ho ! Oh ! Eh ! He ! Euh ! Heu ! &c.

Painful sensations ; as—

Ah ! Oh ! Eh ! Ouf ! Aie ! Ahi ! Aye ! Hélas ! Holà ! &c.

Derision ; as—

Oui-dà ! Ah ! Hum ! Hom ! Ouais ! &c.

Contempt, dislike ; as—

Pouah ! Bah ! Baste ! Hou ! Zest ! &c.

Interrogation, appeal ; as—

Hé ! Eh bien ! Hem ! Hein ! Ho ! Holà ! Heim ! St !

Enforcement of silence ; as—

Chut ! St ! Paix !

Some whole words are used interjectively ; as—

Miracle ! wonderful !
Miséricorde ! mercy !
Patience ! patience !

Silence ! silence !
Tiens ! hold ! listen ! see !
Gare ! take place !

Or combinations of words ; as—

Ma foi ! by my faith
Dame ! (for *par notre Dame !*) why ! well, of course !
Par mon chef, by my head !
Par ma barbe, by my beard !
Ei dono ! fie !

THE VARIABLE PARTS OF SPEECH.

THE ARTICLES.

XI. In French there are three Articles, *the Definite, the Partitive, and the Indefinite.*

XII. The Articles, meaningless in themselves, are only used in connexion with nouns, whose condition they affect, without altering their meaning.

XIII. The *Definite* Article changes, to suit itself to the gender, case, and number of the noun it accompanies.

XIV. The Definite Article.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL	
Masculine.	Feminine.	of both Genders.	
Nom. { Le	La	Les	the,
& Acc. { L'	L'		
Gen. { Du	De la	Des	of, or from the,
{ De l'	De l'		
Dat. { Au	A la	Aux	to the.
{ A l'	A l'		

The forms *L', de l', a l'*, are adopted for euphony, instead of *Le, la; Du, de la; Au, à la;* before words beginning with a vowel, or an unaspirated *h*.

XV. The Partitive Article.

		SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
		<i>Masculine.</i>	<i>Feminine.</i>	
Nom.	{ Du	De la		Des some, any,
& Acc.	{ De l'	De l'		
Gen.	De	De		De of,
Dat.	{ À du	À de la		
	{ À de l'	À de l'		À des to „ „

XVI. The Indefinite Article.

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.*
Masculine.		Feminine.	
Un	Une	a, an, or one	Des
D'un	D'une	of a, or an	De
A un	A une	to a, or an	A des.

NOUNS.

XVII. Nouns are the names of things. French nouns are either masculine or feminine. They have two numbers, the singular and the plural. In most cases the numbers vary. The plural is formed from the singular.

XVIII. The French nouns do not change their form in altering their case. They are declined with the help of the articles, or the prepositions *de* and *a*.

XIX. Proper Names are the names of persons and places.

* Literally, *Un, une*, one, a, an, could admit of no Plural, being by nature Singular only. *Des* is an indefinite plural, but not the plural of *un*.

XX. Instances of singular nouns—

<i>Homme</i> , m. man	<i>Seine</i> , f. Seine
<i>Femme</i> , f. woman	<i>Ciel</i> , m. Heaven
<i>Soleil</i> , m. sun	<i>France</i> , f. France
<i>Livre</i> , m. book	<i>Angleterre</i> , f. England
<i>César</i> , m. Cæsar	<i>Vapeur</i> , f. steam.
<i>Paris</i> , m. Paris	<i>Horloge</i> , f. clock.

FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

XXI. Generally an *s*, added to the singular, forms the plural of a noun ; as, *Un homme*, a man, *des hommes*, men.

Exceptions.

XXII. Nouns ending in *S*, *X*, and *Z*, remain invariable, and undergo no change in becoming plural ; as, *Un fils*, a son, *des fils*, sons ; *Du succès*, success, *des succès*, successes ; *Une souris*, a mouse, *des souris*, mice ; *Une voix*, a voice, *des voix*, voices ; *Un nez*, a nose, *des nez*, noses.

XXIII. Nouns ending in *Al* change *al* into *aux* ; as, *Un mal*, an evil, *des maux*, evils ; *Un cheval*, a horse, *des chevaux*, horses ; and all others in *Al*, excepting *Carnaval*, a carnival, *Bal*, a ball (dancing,) and a few more of unfrequent use.

XXIV. Nouns ending in *Au* take an *X* instead of an *S* in their plural number ; as, *Un bateau*, a boat, *des bateaux*, boats ; *Un couteau*, a knife, *des couteaux*, knives ; *Un château*, a castle, *des châteaux*, castles ; *Un corbeau*, a crow, *des corbeaux*, crows.

XXV. Nouns ending in *Eu* take an *X*, instead of *S*, for the plural termination ; as, *Un cheveu*, a hair, *des cheveux*, hair ; *Un jeu*, a game, *des jeux*, games ; *Un aveu*, a confession, *des aveux*, confessions.

XXVI. The following nouns in *Ou*, *Un Bijou*, a jewel, *Un caillou*, a pebble, *Un chou*, a cabbage, *Un genou*, a knee, *Un hibou*, an owl, *Un joujou*, a plaything, end in *X*, instead of *S*, in the plural ; as, *des bijoux*, *des cailloux*, *des choux*, *des genoux*, *des hiboux*, *des joujoux* : all others in *Ou* take an *S*.

XXVII. *Un œil*, an eye, makes *les yeux*, the eyes; *Le ciel*, the sky, heaven, makes *les cieux*, the heavens; *Un aïeul*, an ancestor, makes *des aïeux*, ancestors.

XXVIII. The following nouns in *ail*, as, *bail*, lease, *corail*, coral, *soupirail*, a cellar window, *travail*, work, *vantail*, one of a pair of folding doors, *vitrail*, a church window, make in the plural *baux*, *coraux*, *soupiraux*, *travaux*, *vantaux*, *vitraux*.

The Gender of French Nouns.

XXIX. French nouns must *per force* be of the masculine or of the feminine gender.

In English, the gender belongs to the person or the creature; in French, to the word that expresses it, whether signifying person, animated creature, or inanimate thing. Even, in many instances, the sex of the animal is not a guide to the gender of the noun.

XXX. The gender of a noun may in some cases be known by its termination; thus—

1. The nouns ending in *tion* are all feminine.
2. The nouns ending in *té*, (except *été*, summer, *comté*, county, *côté*, side, *comité*, committee, *pâté*, pie, *traité*, treaty, *arrêté*, a decree,) are feminine.
3. The nouns ending in *tié* are feminine.
4. All the words ending in *B, C, D, G, H, K, L, P, Q, Y, Z*, are masculine.
5. And nearly all those ending in the letters *A, I, O, U, F, M, N, R, S, T, X*, are also masculine.
6. The most notable exceptions to these are *eau*, f. water, *vertu*, f. virtue, *foi*, f. faith, *loi*, f. law, *peau*, f. skin, *tribu*, f. tribe, *fourmi*, f. ant, *soif*, f. thirst, *clef*, f. key, *nef*, f. nave, *faim*, f. hunger, *fin*, f. end, *main*, f. hand, *leçon*, f. lesson, *maison*, f. house, *raison*, f. reason, *prison*, f. prison, *chair*, f. flesh, *mer*, f. sea, *tour*, f. tower, *cour*, f. court, *cuiller*, f. spoon, *fois*, f. time, *brebis*, f. sheep, *souris*, f. mouse, *dent*, f. tooth, *forêt*, f. forest, *nuit*, f. night, *part*, f. share, *jument*, f. mare, *croix*, f. cross, *noix*, f. nut, *paix*, f. peace, *perdrix*, f. partridge, *voix*, f. voice, *faux*, f. scythe.

7. The nouns ending in *é* (acute), except *té*, *tié*, are generally speaking masculine.

8. The termination which appears to be the most equally divided between the two genders is that of *e* (mute.) Perhaps the feminines predominate, but the dictionary must be consulted.

9. The termination *age* may be considered a masculine termination, the following words being excepted—*Page*, f. a page, *rage*, f. rage, *cage*, f. cage, *image*, f. image, *nage*, f. swimming, *plage*, f. a beach.

10. *Eur* is properly a feminine termination, but it has many masculines, and the dictionary must be consulted.

11. The names of trees, of whatever termination, are masculine.

XXXI. The names of animated creatures in French are generally masculine or feminine, according to the sex. In many instances, the word for the male and female creatures is the same, with an altered termination.

Masculine.

1. *Homme*, man
- Mari*, husband
- Fils*, son
- Gendre*, son-in-law
- Neveu*, nephew
- Oncle*, uncle
- Père*, father
- Epoux*, husband
- Lion*, lion
- Tigre*, tiger
- Chat*, cat
- Chien*, dog
- Cheval*, horse
- Ane*, ass
- Faisan*, pheasant
- Coc*, cock

Feminine.

- Femme*, woman
- Femme*, wife
- Fille*, daughter
- Bru*, daughter-in-law
- Niece*, niece
- Tante*, aunt
- Mère*, mother
- Epouse*, wife
- Lionne*, lioness
- Tigresse*, tigress
- Chatte*, she-cat
- Chienne*, bitch
- Cavale* (*jument*), mare
- Anesse*, she-ass
- Faisanne*, hen pheasant
- Poule*, hen.

2. Many others have a fixed gender, irrespective of sex: thus, *Elephant*, m. male or female Elephant; *Corbeau*, m.

raven, cock or hen ; *Corneille*, f. rook, the same ; *Perdrix*, f. partridge, the same ; *Souris*, f. mouse of either sex ; and others.

3. Many other nouns, being the names of men and women, according to their various qualifications, personalities, trades, professions, vices, and defects, have a masculine and a feminine form ; as—

<i>Empereur</i> , emperor	<i>Impératrice</i> , empress
<i>Roi</i> , king	<i>Reine</i> , queen
<i>Prince</i> , prince	<i>Princesse</i> , princess
<i>Duc</i> , duke	<i>Duchesse</i> , duchess
<i>Marquis</i> , marquis	<i>Marquise</i> , marchioness
<i>Baron</i> , baron	<i>Baronne</i> , baroness
<i>Comte</i> , count, earl	<i>Comtesse</i> , countess
<i>Ambassador</i> , ambassador	<i>Ambassadrice</i> , ambadress
<i>Maréchal</i> , marshal	<i>Maréchale</i> , his wife
<i>Boulangier</i> , baker	<i>Boulangère</i> , baker or baker's wife
<i>Boucher</i> , butcher	<i>Bouchère</i> , butcher or butcher's wife
<i>Epicier</i> , grocer	<i>Epicière</i> , grocer or grocer's wife
<i>Jardinier</i> , gardener	<i>Jardinière</i> , his wife
<i>Berger</i> , shepherd	<i>Bergère</i> , shepherdess
<i>Meunier</i> , miller	<i>Meunière</i> , his wife
<i>Portier</i> , door porter	<i>Portière</i> , ———
<i>Coquin</i> , rascal	<i>Coquine</i> , ———
<i>Scélerat</i> , villain	<i>Scélerate</i> , ———
<i>Fripon</i> , rogue	<i>Friponne</i> , ———
<i>Gueux</i> , beggar	<i>Gueuse</i> , ———
<i>Mendiant</i> , mendicant	<i>Mendiante</i> , beggar woman
<i>Cuisinier</i> , cook (man)	<i>Cusinière</i> , cook (woman.)

XXXII. Nouns declined with the help of articles and prepositions.

Nouns declined with the Definite Article.

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
<i>Le champ</i> , m. the field	<i>Les champs</i> , the fields
<i>du champ</i> , of the field	<i>des champs</i> , of the fields
<i>au champ</i> , to the field	<i>aux champs</i> , to the fields.
<i>L'air</i> , m. the air	<i>Les airs</i> , the airs
<i>de l'air</i> , of the air	<i>des airs</i> , of the airs
<i>à l'air</i> , to the air	<i>aux airs</i> , to the airs.

La porte, f. the door or gate
de la porte, of the door
à la porte, to the door

L'action, f. the action
de l'action, of the action
à l'action, to the action

Les portes, the doors
des portes, of the doors
aux portes, to the doors.

Les actions, the actions
des actions, of the actions
aux actions, to the actions.

Nouns in the Singular.

Le fer, iron
du fer, of iron
au fer, to iron.

L'or, gold
de l'or, of gold
à l'or, to gold.

La paix, peace
de la paix, of peace
à la paix, to peace.

Le métal, metal
du métal, of metal
au métal, to metal

Nouns in the Plural.

Les poissons, fish
des poissons, of fish
aux poissons, to fish.

Les injures, abuse
des injures, of abuse
aux injures, to abuse.

Les abus, abuses
des abus, of abuses
aux abus, to abuses.

Les métaux, metals
des métaux, of metals
aux métaux, to metals.

XXXIII. Nouns declined with the Partitive Article.

Du sel, salt
de sel, of salt
à du sel, to salt.

De la haine, hatred
de haine, of hatred
à de la haine, to hatred.

De l'héroïsme, m. heroism
d'héroïsme, of heroism
à de l'héroïsme, to heroism.

De l'herbe, f. grass
d'herbe, of grass
à de l'herbe, to grass.

Des fruits, m. fruits
de fruits, of fruits
à des fruits, to fruits.

Des peines, f. troubles
de peines, of troubles
à des peines, to troubles.

Des hiboux, m. owls
de hiboux, of owls
à des hiboux, to owls.

Des habits, m. clothes
d'habits, of clothes
à des habits, to clothes.

XXXIV. Nouns declined with the Indefinite Article.

Singular.

Un enfant, a child
d'un enfant, of a child
à un enfant, to a child

Plural.

Des enfants, children
d'enfant, of children
à des enfants, to children.

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
<i>Une maison</i> , a house <i>d'une maison</i> , of a house <i>à une maison</i> , to a house	<i>Des maisons</i> , houses <i>de maisons</i> , of houses <i>à des maisons</i> , to houses.
<i>Un oiseau</i> , a bird <i>d'un oiseau</i> , of a bird <i>à un oiseau</i> , to a bird	<i>Des oiseaux</i> , birds <i>d'oiseaux</i> , of birds <i>à des oiseaux</i> , to birds.
<i>Un pays</i> , a country <i>d'un pays</i> , of a country <i>à un pays</i> , to a country	<i>Des pays</i> , countries <i>de pays</i> , of countries <i>à des pays</i> , to countries.
<i>Une qualité</i> , a quality <i>d'une qualité</i> , of a quality <i>à une qualité</i> , to a quality	<i>Des qualités</i> , qualities <i>de qualités</i> , of qualities <i>à des qualités</i> , to qualities.
<i>Un œil</i> , an eye <i>d'un œil</i> , of an eye <i>à un œil</i> , to an eye	<i>Des yeux</i> , eyes <i>d'yeux</i> , of eyes <i>à des yeux</i> , to eyes.

Decline according to the above models :—In the SINGULAR and PLURAL—*Le canard*, the duck, *l'étoile*, the star, *la lumière*, the light, *le livre*, the book, *le cheval*, the horse, *l'homme*, the man. In the SINGULAR only—*La confiance*, trust, *la défiance*, distrust, *la force*, strength, *le mépris*, contempt, *le mouvement*, motion, *la vie*, life. In the PLURAL only—*Les hommes*, men, *les arbres*, trees, *les lettres*, f. literature, *les mœurs*, f. manners. In both numbers—*Un nom*, a name, *une chose*, a thing, *un animal*, an animal, *une bête*, a beast, *un mot*, a word, *une fleur*, a flower, *un ours*, a bear, *un Anglais*, an Englishman, *un Français*, a Frenchman, *un Allemand*, a German, *un bas*, a stocking, *un Espagnol*, a Spaniard, *un cheveu*, a hair. In the SINGULAR—*La pluie*, the rain, *la hauteur*, height, *la largeur*, breadth, *le bruit*, noise, *la musique*, music, &c. &c.

Proper Names.

XXXV. Names of countries take an article: names of people and of towns take no article.

la France, France
de la France, of or from France
à la France, to France.

la Prusse, Prussia
de la Prusse, of or from Prussia
à la Prusse, to Prussia.

la Russie, Russia
de la Russie, of or from Russia
à la Russie, to Russia.

l'Allemagne, Germany
de l'Allemagne, of or from Ger.
à l'Allemagne, to Germany.

Paris, Paris
de Paris, of or from Paris
à Paris, at or to Paris.

Auguste, Augustus
d'Auguste, of Augustus
à Auguste, to Augustus.

Londres, London
de Londres, of or from London
à Londres, to London.

Le Portugal, Portugal
du Portugal, of or from Port.
au Portugal, to Portugal.

le Danemarck, Denmark
du Danemarck, of or from Den.
au Danemarck, to Denmark.

le Poitou, Poitou
du Poitou, of or from Poitou
au Poitou, to Poitou.

le Maine, Main
du Maine, of or from Main
au Maine, to Main.

César, Cæsar
de César, of or from Cæsar
à César, to Cæsar.

Marie, Mary
de Marie, of Mary
à Marie, to Mary.

Amiens, Amiens
d'Amiens, of or from Amiens
à Amiens, to or at Amiens.

The French use a definite article with these towns;—*Le Havre*, Havre, *le Caire*, Cairo.

OF ADJECTIVES.

XXXVI. Adjectives qualify nouns : for this purpose they accompany them, or refer to them, and, throwing a new light upon them, place them a new situation. Thus, an object or a person is *good* or *bad*, is *large* or *small* : the words *good*, *bad*, *large*, *small*, are the adjectives qualifying this person or object, giving it a peculiar condition.

Some adjectives, limited in number, qualify nouns, by ascribing the possession of them to a person or object understood, and are called *possessive adjectives* ; as, in the expressions, *my hat*, *your father*, *his impatience*, *its right*. Here *my*, *your*, *his*, *its*, are of this kind.

Others indicate or specify persons or objects, and are called *demonstrative* : these also are limited. In the expressions *this person*, *that object*, *those things*,—*this*, *that*, *those*, are demonstrative adjectives.

Others also, very limited in number, are *relative*, *admirative*, *interrogative*. In *what thing or person?* *which coat?* *what a man!* *what* and *which* are relative adjectives.

Others are *numeral*, indicating the number of objects or persons, or their numeral order ; as, *one*, *two*, *three* ; *first*, *second*, *third*.

French Adjectives.

XXXVII. Adjectives alter their termination, to agree in gender and number with nouns expressed, understood, or represented. They have two genders, the masculine and the feminine ; and two numbers, the singular and the plural.

E is always the termination of the feminine.

Feminines of Adjectives.

XXXVIII. The feminines of adjectives are formed from the masculine: thus –

An *e* is added to the masculine; as, *grand*, mas. great, *grande*, feminine.

Exceptions.

XXXIX. Adjectives ending in *e* mute, in the masculine undergo no change, being alike in both genders; as, *jeune*, mas. and fem. young; *riche*, mas. and fem. rich.

XL. PECULIAR FORMS OF FEMININES.

1. Adjectives ending in *f*, change the *f* into *ve*; as, *Bref*, brief, *brève*; *vif*, sharp, *vive*.

2. Those in *eux* become *euse* in the feminine; as, *Généreux*, generous, *généreuse*.

3. Nouns in *eur*, used as adjectives, change this termination into *euse*; as, *Rieur*, laughing, *rieuse*; *moqueur*, derisive, *moqueuse*; *railleur*, bantering, *railleuse*. The termination *teur* becomes *trice*; as, *Destructeur*, destructive, *destructrice*; *révéléteur*, detective, *révélatrice*. *Flatteur*, flattering, *flatteuse*; *enchanteur*, enchanting, *enchanteresse*, are exceptions.

4. *L* is sometimes doubled before the termination, after *e* and *i*; as, *Gentil*, nice, *gentille*; *tel*, such, *telle*; *pareil*, like, *pareille*.

5. Many of those ending in *n*, *s*, *t*, double this letter before the termination; as, *Bon*, good, *bonne*; *exprès*, on purpose, *expresse*; *sot*, foolish, *sotte*; *gras*, fat, *grasse*; *gros*, big, *grosse*; *net*, clean, *nette*.

6. Some in *c* take an *h* before the *e*; as, *Sec*, dry, *sèche*; *franc*, open, *franche*; *blanc*, white, *blanche*. Some take *qu*; as, *Turc*, Turkish, *Turque*; *Grec*, Greek, *Grecque*.

7. Some in *g* take *u* between *g* and *e*; as, *Long*, *long*, *longue*.

8. The adjectives *faux*, false, fem. *fausse*; *roux*, red, fem. *rousse*; *frais*, fresh, fem. *fraiche*; *fou* or *fol*, mad, fem. *folle*; *mou*, soft, fem. *molle*; *beau* or *bel*, beautiful, fem. *belle*; *nouveau*, or *nouvel*, new, fem. *nouvelle*; *vieux* or *vieil*, old, fem. *vieille*. *Bénin*, *bénigne*; *malin*, *maligne*, are exceptional, and cannot be classed.

The Plural of Adjectives.

XLI. Adjectives form their plurals as the nouns do.

In the feminine, of which the termination is invariably in *e*, the plural is always *es*.

A LIST OF SOME

XLII. Qualifying Adjectives.

<i>Singular.</i>		<i>Plural</i>		English.
Masculine,	Feminine.	Masculine,	Feminine.	
<i>Rond,</i>	<i>ronde,</i>	<i>ronds,</i>	<i>rondes,</i>	round.
<i>Normand,</i>	<i>Normande,</i>	<i>Normands,</i>	<i>Normandes,</i>	Norman.
<i>Allemand,</i>	<i>Allemande,</i>	<i>Allemands,</i>	<i>Allemandes,</i>	German.
<i>Pressé,</i>	<i>pressée,</i>	<i>pressés,</i>	<i>pressées,</i>	hurried.
<i>Aimé,</i>	<i>aimée,</i>	<i>aimés,</i>	<i>aimées,</i>	beloved.
<i>Joli,</i>	<i>jolie,</i>	<i>jolis,</i>	<i>jolies,</i>	pretty.
<i>Humain,</i>	<i>humaine,</i>	<i>humains,</i>	<i>humaines,</i>	humane.
<i>Divin,</i>	<i>divine,</i>	<i>divins,</i>	<i>divines,</i>	divine.
<i>Meilleur,</i>	<i>meilleure,</i>	<i>meilleurs,</i>	<i>meilleures,</i>	better.
<i>Cher,</i>	<i>chère,</i>	<i>chers,</i>	<i>chères,</i>	dear.
<i>Fier,</i>	<i>fière,</i>	<i>fiers,</i>	<i>fières,</i>	proud.
<i>Français,</i>	<i>Française,</i>	<i>Français,</i>	<i>Françaises,</i>	French.
<i>Gris,</i>	<i>grise,</i>	<i>gris,</i>	<i>grises,</i>	grey.
<i>Confus,</i>	<i>confuse,</i>	<i>confus,</i>	<i>confuses,</i>	confused.
<i>Petit,</i>	<i>petite,</i>	<i>petits,</i>	<i>petites,</i>	small.
<i>Connu,</i>	<i>connue,</i>	<i>connus,</i>	<i>connues,</i>	known.
<i>Trapu,</i>	<i>trapue,</i>	<i>trapus,</i>	<i>trapues,</i>	squat.
<i>Bleu,</i>	<i>bleue,</i>	<i>bleus,</i>	<i>bleues,</i>	blue.
<i>Aigu,</i>	<i>aigüe,</i>	<i>aigus,</i>	<i>aigües,</i>	acute.
<i>Heureux,</i>	<i>heureuse,</i>	<i>heureux,</i>	<i>heureuses,</i>	happy.
<i>Affreux,</i>	<i>affreuse,</i>	<i>affreux,</i>	<i>affreuses,</i>	frightful.

XLIII. Indefinite Adjectives.

<i>Aucun,</i>	<i>aucune,</i>	<i>aucuns,</i>	<i>aucunes,</i>	no.
<i>Nul,</i>	<i>nulle,</i>	<i>nuls,</i>	<i>nulles,</i>	no.
<i>Quelques,</i>	<i>quelque,</i>	<i>quelques,</i>	<i>quelques,</i>	some.
<i>Plusieurs,</i>				several.
<i>Tout,</i>	<i>toute,</i>	<i>tous,</i>	<i>toutes,</i>	all, every.
<i>Même,</i>	<i>même,</i>	<i>mêmes,</i>	<i>mêmes,</i>	same.
<i>Autre,</i>	<i>autre,</i>	<i>autres,</i>	<i>autres,</i>	other.

XLIV. Numeral Adjectives.

<i>Un</i>	1	<i>Onze</i>	11	<i>Vingt-et-un</i>	21	<i>Trente-et-un</i>	31
<i>deux</i>	2	<i>douze</i>	12	<i>vingt-deux</i>	22	<i>trente-deux</i>	32
<i>trois</i>	3	<i>treize</i>	13	<i>vingt-trois</i>	23	<i>trente-trois</i>	33
<i>quatre</i>	4	<i>quatorze</i>	14	<i>vingt-quatre</i>	24	<i>trente-quatre</i>	34
<i>cinq</i>	5	<i>quinze</i>	15	<i>vingt-cinq</i>	25	<i>trente-cinq</i>	35
<i>six</i>	6	<i>seize</i>	16	<i>vingt-six</i>	26	<i>trente-six</i>	36
<i>sept</i>	7	<i>dix-sept</i>	17	<i>vingt-sept</i>	27	<i>trente-sept</i>	37
<i>huit</i>	8	<i>dix-huit</i>	18	<i>vingt-huit</i>	28	<i>trente-huit</i>	38
<i>neuf</i>	9	<i>dix-neuf</i>	19	<i>vingt-neuf</i>	29	<i>trente-neuf</i>	39
<i>dix</i>	10	<i>vingt</i>	20	<i>trente</i>	30	<i>quarante</i>	40
<i>Quarante-et-un</i>	41			<i>soixante-douze</i>			72
<i>quarante-deux</i>	42			<i>soixante-treize</i>			73
<i>quarante-trois</i>	43			<i>soixante-quatorze</i>			74
<i>quarante-quatre</i>	44			<i>soixante-quinze</i>			75
<i>quarante-cinq</i>	45			<i>soixante-seize</i>			76
<i>quarante-six</i>	46			<i>soixante-dix-sept</i>			77
<i>quarante-sept</i>	47			<i>soixante-dix-huit</i>			78
<i>quarante-huit</i>	48			<i>soixante-dix-neuf</i>			79
<i>quarante-neuf</i>	49			<i>quatre-vingt</i>			80
<i>cinquante</i>	50			<i>quatre-vingt-un</i>			81
<i>cinquante-et-un</i>	51			<i>quatre-vingt-deux</i>			82
<i>cinquante-deux</i>	52			<i>quatre-vingt-trois</i>			83
<i>cinquante-trois</i>	53			<i>quatre-vingt-quatre</i>			84
<i>cinquante-quatre</i>	54			<i>quatre-vingt-cinq</i>			85
<i>cinquante-cinq</i>	55			<i>quatre-vingt-six</i>			86
<i>cinquante-six</i>	56			<i>quatre-vingt-sept</i>			87
<i>cinquante-sept</i>	57			<i>quatre-vingt-huit</i>			88
<i>cinquante-huit</i>	58			<i>quatre-vingt-neuf</i>			89
<i>cinquante-neuf</i>	59			<i>quatre-vingt-dix</i>			90
<i>soixante</i>	60			<i>quatre-vingt-onze</i>			91
<i>soixante-et-un</i>	61			<i>quatre-vingt-douze</i>			92
<i>soixante-deux</i>	62			<i>quatre-vingt-treize</i>			93
<i>soixante-trois</i>	63			<i>quatre-vingt-quatorze</i>			94
<i>soixante-quatre</i>	64			<i>quatre-vingt-quinze</i>			95
<i>soixante-cinq</i>	65			<i>quatre-vingt-seize</i>			96
<i>soixante-six</i>	66			<i>quatre-vingt-dix-sept</i>			97
<i>soixante-sept</i>	67			<i>quatre-vingt-dix-huit</i>			98
<i>soixante-huit</i>	68			<i>quatre-vingt-dix-neuf</i>			99
<i>soixante-neuf</i>	69			<i>cent</i>			100
<i>soixante-dix</i>	70			<i>mille</i>			1000.
<i>soixante-onze</i>	71						

Any numbers may be added to *Cent* or *Mille*.

XLV. *Vingt* and *Cent* take the form of the Plural when necessary, except when followed by another number.

XLVI. Ordinal Numbers.

<i>Premier, première</i>	1st.	<i>dix-septième</i>	17th.
<i>second, seconde</i> }	2nd.	<i>dix-huitième</i>	18th.
<i>deuxième</i>		<i>dix-neuvième</i>	19th.
<i>troisième</i>	3rd.	<i>vingt-ième</i>	20th.
<i>quatrième</i>	4th.	<i>vingt-et-unième</i>	21st.
<i>cinquième</i>	5th.	<i>vingt-deuxième</i>	22nd.
<i>sixième</i>	6th.	<i>vingt-troisième</i>	23rd.
<i>septième</i>	7th.	<i>trentième</i>	30th.
<i>huitième</i>	8th.	<i>trente-et-unième</i>	31st.
<i>neuvième</i>	9th.	<i>quatre-vingt-dix-neuvième</i>	99th.
<i>dixième</i>	10th.	<i>centième</i>	100th.
<i>onzième</i>	11th.	<i>deux-centième</i>	200th.
<i>douzième</i>	12th.	<i>trois-cent-et-unième</i>	301st.
<i>treizième</i>	13th.	<i>millième</i>	1000th.
<i>quatorzième</i>	14th.	<i>mille-huit-cent-soixante-</i>	
<i>quinzième</i>	15th.	<i>cinquième</i>	1865th.
<i>seizième</i>	16th.	<i>millionième</i>	1,000,000th.

For any others, add *ième* to the last consonant of the Numeral.

The Degrees of Comparison.

The qualifying powers of Adjectives can increase or decrease, reach the highest or the lowest state. These differences are the degrees of comparison—the *positive*, the *comparative*, and the *superlative*.

XLVII. The addition of the word *plus* to an Adjective in the positive, makes it comparative in the greater degree; the addition of *moins*, makes it comparative in the lesser degree: the addition of the definite article (*le, la, les,*) to the comparative forms makes them superlative; as, *Noir*, black, *plus noir*, blacker, *le plus noir*, the blackest; *dur*, hard, *moins dur*, less hard, *le moins dur*, the least hard.

Agreement of Nouns and Adjectives.

XLVIII. French Adjectives, in their agreement with Nouns, are sometimes placed before them, and sometimes after :

XLIX. They are more generally placed after, though there is no absolute rule on the subject. A few Adjectives are generally placed before the Nouns ; namely —

Grand, great
petit, small
bon, good
mauvais, bad
meilleur, better

pire, worse
moindre, less
vieux, old
premier, first
dernier, last.

L. The Adjectives of colour are placed after the Noun.

Examples,

LI. To shew the place of Adjectives, and their agreement with the Noun.

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. <i>Un habit neuf</i> , a new coat | <i>de beaux enfants</i> , fine children |
| <i>des habits neufs</i> , new clothes | <i>un mauvais livre</i> , a bad book |
| <i>une maison neuve</i> , a new house | <i>de mauvais livres</i> , bad books |
| <i>des bottes neuves</i> , new boots | <i>un faux prétexte</i> , a false pretence |
| <i>un bon cheval</i> , a good horse | <i>de faux prétextes</i> , false pretences |
| <i>de bons chevaux</i> , good horses | <i>un poëme épique</i> , an epic poem |
| <i>une bonne personne</i> , a good person | <i>des poëmes épiques</i> , epic poems |
| <i>de bonnes personnes</i> , good people | <i>un gros paquet</i> , a big bundle |
| <i>une voix agréable</i> , a pleasant voice | <i>de gros paquets</i> , big bundles |
| <i>des voix agréables</i> , pleasant voices | <i>une grosse orange</i> , a large orange |
| <i>un verre cassé</i> , a broken glass | <i>de grosses oranges</i> , large oranges |
| <i>une vitre cassée</i> , a broken pane | <i>un pareil monstre</i> , such a monster |
| <i>des souliers usés</i> , worn-out shoes | <i>de pareils événements</i> , such events |
| <i>des portes fermées</i> , closed doors | <i>une pareille difficulté</i> , such a difficulty |
| <i>un mur élevé</i> , a high wall | <i>un vieux fauteuil</i> , an old arm-chair |
| <i>des montagnes élevées</i> , high mountains | <i>une vieille poule</i> , an old hen |
| <i>un beau jardin</i> , a beautiful garden | <i>un mot sublime</i> , a sublime expression |
| <i>un bel enfant</i> , a fine child | <i>une idée sublime</i> , a sublime idea |
| <i>de beaux discours</i> , fine speeches | |
| <i>une belle fleur</i> , a beautiful flower | |

2. *Un courage indomptable*, indomitable courage
une conduite blâmable, faulty conduct
un gazon frais, fresh turf
une extrême impatience, extreme impatience
une grande vitesse, great swiftness
un soin particulier, particular care
un goût parfait, perfect taste
une blancheur irréprochable, irreproachable whiteness
- Une toile fine*, fine linen
une musique délicieuse, delightful music
une grande gaieté, great cheerfulness
un rouge ardent, fiery red
une eau jaillissante, spouting water
un vin vieux, old wine
une prompt justice, swift justice
une piété profonde, deep piety.
-

3. *Le feu sacré*, the sacred fire
la terre sainte, the holy land
la religion chrétienne, the christian religion
le théâtre français, the french stage
la langue française, the french language
le bras droit, the right arm
la jambe droite, the right leg
le pied gauche, the left foot
la main gauche, the left hand
l'écureuil gris, the grey squirrel
le grand mogul, the great mogul
le genre humain, mankind
les saints pères, the holy fathers
l'océan atlantique, the atlantic ocean
- Le peuple français*, the French people
le premier homme, the first man
le dernier moment, the last moment
la grande ourse, the great bear
le monarque anglais, the English monarch
la nation anglaise, the English nation
le monde ancien, the old world
l'ancien testament, the old testament
les journaux américains, the American newspapers
les beaux arts, the fine arts.
-

4. *L'histoire ancienne*, ancient history
l'encre noire, black ink
le papier buvard, blotting paper
la grèce moderne, modern Greece
la jeune france, young France
le mois dernier, last month
la semaine dernière, last week
la bonne société, good society
- La mauvaise honte*, mistaken modesty
l'eau chaude, hot water
les yeux bleus, blue eyes
les vieilles gens, old people
les honnêtes gens, civil people
les paroles inutiles, useless words
la bonne conduite, good behaviour
la société française, French society.
-

5. *Du temps perdu*, lost time
du linge blanc, white linen
du thé vert, green tea
de l'eau froide, cold water
du pain sec, dry bread

Du beurre frais, fresh butter
de la craie blanche, white chalk
de l'eau sucrée, sugared water
de l'encre épaisse, thick ink
du vin rouge, red wine.

6. *Des fruits secs*, dried fruits
des pommes crues, raw apples
des pommes cuites, roasted apples
des bruits épouvantables, awful noises
des larmes amères, bitter tears
de sourds mugissements, low groans
de vaines paroles, empty words
d'effreux malheurs, fearful misfortunes
des couleurs sombres, dark colours
des livres amusants, amusing books
d'intéressants détails, interesting details
d'aimables enfants, nice children
des cris perçants, piercing shrieks
de vives couleurs, bright colours
de grandes lettres, big letters
des choses inutiles, useless things
des soldats disciplinés, trained soldiers
de jolies chansons, pretty songs

Des chansons joyeuses, merry songs
de grands yeux, large eyes
des cheveux bruns, brown hair
de mauvais traitements, bad treatment
de bons offices, kind services
des regards furieux, infuriated looks
des coups réitérés, repeated blows
des contes merveilleux, marvellous stories
de beaux jours, happy days
de longues nuits, long nights
d'impardonnables erreurs, unpardonable mistakes
d'insupportables fadaïses, insufferable trumpery
des élèves appliqués et sages, industrious and good pupils
des enfants attentifs et obéissants, attentive and obedient boys.

Possessive Adjectives.

LII. The Possessive Adjectives are—

SINGULAR.		•	PLURAL	
Masculine.	Feminine.		of both Genders.	
<i>Mon,</i>	<i>Ma,</i>	}	<i>Mes,</i>	my,
<i>Ton,</i>	<i>Ta,</i>		<i>Tes,</i>	thy,
<i>Son,</i>	<i>Sa,</i>		<i>Ses,</i>	his, her, one's, its.
<i>Notre,</i>	} of both Genders.	}	<i>Nos,</i>	our,
<i>Votre,</i>			<i>Vos,</i>	your,
<i>Leur,</i>			<i>Leurs,</i>	their.

LIII. *Mon, ton, son*, are used for euphony before feminine words beginning with a vowel or an *h* inaspirate.

Demonstrative Adjectives.

LIV. The Demonstrative Adjectives are—

SINGULAR.		PLURAL
Masculine.	Feminine.	of both Genders.
<i>Ce,</i>	<i>Cette,</i> this, that,	<i>Ces,</i> these, those.
<i>Cet,</i> before vowels or an <i>h</i> in- aspirate.		

Relative, Admirative, and Interrogative Adjectives.

LV. The Relative, Admirative, and Interrogative Adjectives are—

Quel, quelle ; quels, quelles ? Which ? What ? What a —!

Lequel, laquelle ; lesquels, lesquelles ; Which, the which.

LVI. Examples.

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. <i>Mon frère,</i> my brother | <i>Ta jambe droite,</i> thy right leg |
| <i>ma sœur,</i> my sister | <i>tes dents,</i> f. thy teeth |
| <i>mes parents,</i> m. my relations | <i>tes cheveux,</i> m. thy hair |
| <i>mon esprit,</i> m. my mind | <i>notre ami,</i> m. our friend |
| <i>mon âme,</i> f. my soul | <i>nos amis,</i> our friends |
| <i>mes idées,</i> f. my ideas | <i>notre place,</i> f. our place |
| <i>son corps,</i> his, her, or its body | <i>nos places,</i> our places |
| <i>sa tête,</i> his, her, or its head | <i>votre devoir,</i> your duty |
| <i>ses bras,</i> m. his, her, or its arms | <i>votre affaire,</i> your business |
| <i>son œil droit,</i> his, her, or its
right-eye | <i>vos dispositions,</i> your arrange-
ments |
| <i>son intelligence,</i> f. his or her in-
tellect | <i>leur établissement,</i> their establish-
ment |
| <i>ses mains,</i> f. his or her hands | <i>leur belle maison,</i> f. their beauti-
ful house. |
| <i>ton pied gauche,</i> thy left foot | |
-
- | | |
|--|-----------------------------------|
| 2. <i>Ce projet,</i> this or that plan | <i>Ces projets,</i> those plans |
| <i>cet animal,</i> this or that animal | <i>ces animaux,</i> these animals |
| <i>cette erreur,</i> that mistake | <i>ces erreurs,</i> those errors |
| <i>cet homme,</i> that man | <i>ces hommes,</i> those men |
| <i>ce héros,</i> this hero | <i>ces héros,</i> these heroes. |

3. *Quel homme !* what a man ! *Quelles plumes détestables !* what horrible pens !
quel homme ? which man ? *quels journaux ?* which newspapers ?
quelle chaleur ! what a heat ! *quelles femmes ?* which women ?
quelle personne ? which person ?
quels beaux enfants ! what beautiful children !

The Degrees of Comparison.

LVII. Examples of the Comparative and Superlative degrees of comparison.

Comparatives.

- | | | |
|--|---|-------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Un sujet plus agréable,</i> | } | A more pleasant subject. |
| <i>Un plus agréable sujet,</i> | | |
| <i>Une affaire plus importante,</i> | } | A more important matter. |
| <i>Une plus mauvaise intention,</i> | | |
| <i>Des monuments plus durables,</i> | } | A more evil intention. |
| <i>De plus durables monuments,</i> | | |
| <i>Des personnes plus aimables,</i> | } | More lasting monuments. |
| <i>De plus aimables personnes,</i> | | |
| <i>Une maison plus grande et plus commode,</i> | } | Nicer people. |
| <i>Un meilleur moyen,</i> | | |
| <i>Une meilleure chambre,</i> | } | A larger and more convenient house. |
| <i>De meilleures conditions,</i> | | |
| | | A better means. |
| | | A better room. |
| | | Better conditions. |

Superlatives.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 2. <i>Le plus grand malheur,</i> | The greatest misfortune. |
| <i>Le plus beau temps,</i> | The finest weather. |
| <i>Le chemin le plus direct,</i> | The most direct road. |
| <i>La côte la plus rapide,</i> | The steepest hill. |
| <i>La plus belle promenade,</i> | The most beautiful walk. |
| <i>Les plus généreux sentiments,</i> | The most generous sentiments. |
| <i>Les monstres les plus hideux,</i> | The most hideous monsters. |
| <i>Les étoffes les plus précieuses,</i> | The most precious stuffs. |
| <i>L'homme le plus gai et le plus amusant,</i> | The liveliest and most entertaining man. |
| <i>Le chien le plus sage et le plus fidèle,</i> | The most sensible and most faithful dog. |
| <i>De la littérature la plus nouvelle et la plus amusante,</i> | Of the newest and most amusing literature. |
| <i>Des sentiments les plus profonds et les plus désintéressés,</i> | Of the deepest and most disinterested feelings. |

THE PRONOUNS.

LVIII. Pronouns in language take the place of Nouns. In French they vary in form, and are limited. There are Personal Pronouns, Possessive Pronouns, Demonstrative Pronouns, Relative Pronouns, and Indefinite Pronouns.

LIX. Personal Pronouns.

First Person.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
<i>Je,</i>	<i>I,</i>	<i>Nous,</i>	we, us.
<i>moi,</i>	<i>I, me,</i>		
<i>me,</i>	<i>me.</i>		

Second Person.

<i>Tu,</i>	thou,	<i>Vous,</i>	you.
<i>toi,</i>	thou, thee,		
<i>te,</i>	thee.		

Third Person.

<i>Il,</i> m. he, it,	<i>elle,</i> f. she, it,	<i>Ils,</i> m.	<i>elles,</i> f. they,
<i>lui,</i> he, to him,	<i>elle,</i> she, (her,) to her, (him,)	<i>eux,</i> m.	<i>elles,</i> they, (them,)
<i>en,</i> of it,		<i>leur,</i> m. and f. them,	
<i>le,</i> m. him, it,	<i>la,</i> f. her, it,	<i>en,</i>	of them,
<i>y,</i> at or to it,		<i>les,</i>	them,
<i>soi,</i> oneself,		<i>y,</i>	at or to them,
<i>se,</i> oneself, him, her, itself.		<i>se,</i>	themselves.

LX. Possessive Pronouns, declined as Nouns,

Agreeing in gender and number with the object possessed.

<i>Le mien,</i>	<i>la mienne,</i>	<i>Les miens,</i>	<i>les miennes,</i> mine,
<i>le tien,</i>	<i>la tienne,</i>	<i>les tiens,</i>	<i>les tiennes,</i> thine,
<i>le sien,</i>	<i>la sienne,</i>	<i>les siens,</i>	<i>les siennes,</i> his, her, its,
<i>le nôtre,</i>	<i>la nôtre,</i>	<i>les nôtres,</i>	<i>les nôtres,</i> ours,
<i>le vôtre,</i>	<i>la vôtre,</i>	<i>les vôtres,</i>	<i>les vôtres,</i> yours,
<i>le leur,</i>	<i>la leur.</i>	<i>les leurs,</i>	<i>les leurs,</i> theirs.
<i>Du mien,</i>	<i>de la mienne,</i>	<i>des miens,</i>	<i>des miennes,</i> of mine,
<i>au mien,</i>	<i>à la mienne,</i>	<i>&c.</i>	<i>&c.</i> to mine.

LXI. Demonstrative Pronouns.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
Masculine,	Feminine.	Masculine,	Feminine.
1. <i>Celui-ci,</i> <i>celui-là,</i>	<i>celle-ci,</i> this, <i>celle-là,</i> that.	<i>Ceux-ci,</i> <i>ceux-là,</i>	<i>celles-ci,</i> these, <i>celles-là,</i> those.
2. <i>Celui</i> <i>celle</i>	} <i>de,</i> this, or that of,	}	}
<i>Ceux</i> <i>celles</i>			
<i>Celui</i> <i>celle</i>	} <i>que,</i> the one which,	}	}
<i>Ceux</i> <i>celles</i>			

These all agree with the person or object demonstrated.

3. *Ceci,* this, } Neuter Pronouns, indicating an indefinite
celà, that. } object or a fact.

LXII. Relative Pronouns.

1. <i>Qui,</i> who, which, <i>dont,</i> of whom, of which, <i>que,</i> whom, which, that.		<i>A qui,</i> to whom, <i>pour qui,</i> for whom, <i>de qui,</i> of or from whom.	
Mas.	Fem.	Mas.	Fem.
2. <i>Lequel,</i> <i>duquel,</i> <i>auquel,</i>	<i>laquelle,</i> <i>delàquelle,</i> <i>àlaquelle,</i>	<i>lesquels,</i> <i>desquels,</i> <i>auxquels,</i>	<i>lesquelles,</i> who, which, <i>desquelles,</i> of whom, of which, <i>auxquelles,</i> to whom, to which.

LXIII. Indeterminate, or Indefinite Pronouns.

On, one, some one, people, you,
chacun, chacune, each,
quiconque, whosoever.

THE VERB.

LXIV. The Verb is the word used in the sentence to denote the action or mode of existence of the *subject* signified by the Noun or Pronoun. This action is often imposed upon another object or person, represented by another Noun or Pronoun. The subject acting is the nominative to the Verb, the object acted on is the accusative.

There are three kinds of Verbs: Those expressing a simple action untransferred, which are called *Neuter*; those transferring the action, which are called *Active*; those describing existence in a manner named, which are Verbs *Substantive*. Thus, in

I run,	}	<i>Run</i> and <i>flows</i> are <i>Neuter</i> Verbs.
Water flows,	}	
He takes lessons,	}	<i>Takes</i> and <i>eat</i> are <i>Active</i> Verbs.
Sheep eat grass,	}	
You are kind,	}	<i>Are</i> and <i>looks</i> are <i>Substantive</i>
He looks pale,	}	Verbs.

N. B. Of Verbs *Substantive*, the Verb *To be* is the only one acknowledged as such; all others may be classed as neuters.

The time of the performance of an action, the mood or condition under which it occurs, the time, state, or mood of its existence, even the number of persons enacting it, or the *person* in which the subject performs, create the necessity of variations in a Verb.

LXV. The French Verbs alter their forms, to suit *Mood*, *Tense*, *Number*, and *Person*.

The names of the *Moods* are—the *Infinitive*, or *Indefinite*, giving vaguely the name for the action; the *Indicative*, pointing out its actual performance; the *Subjunctive*, implying that the action is dependent upon circumstances; and the *Imperative*, ordering action.

The names of the *Tenses* are—the *Present Tense*, the *Past Tenses*, of which the varieties are the *Imperfect*, the *Preterite Definite*, the *Preterite Indefinite*, the *Future*, and the *Conditional*.

The *Numbers* are—Singular and Plural.

The *Persons* are—First, Second, and Third. The *First*, I, we; the *Second*, Thou, you, ye; the *Third*, He, she, it, or the names of any one, or anything.

The English and French languages require that the nominative, or subject, of every Verb used should be mentioned, except in the *Infinitive* and parts of the *Imperative Moods*, and the *Participles*, or Adjective forms derived from Verbs.

OBSERVE: That the English Verb undergoes very few alterations, its tenses being chiefly indicated by these auxiliaries, or helps, i.e. *do, does, am, was, were, did, will, would, should, may, might, &c.*; the Verb itself remaining nearly throughout unchanged.

The French Verb undergoes changes for every tense, person, and number; and thus has a termination varying perhaps thirty-six times, to suit the various conditions under which its subject may place it.

The announcing of these variations in Verbs is called *conjugating*.

LXVI. The French use two Auxiliaries for some of their past tenses. These two Verbs, *avoir*, to have, and *etre*, to be, on account of their frequent occurrence, should be learnt first, to help in conjugating others. *Etre* is often used in the same sense as *avoir*.

LXVII. French Verbs are announced by their Infinitives.

LXVIII. There are four terminations of French Infinitives. All Verbs having the same Infinitives may be broadly classed together. Their endings are—*ER, IR, OIR, RE*.

LXIX. Verbs of the same Infinitive termination may still be widely different from one another in the other parts. Verbs that are alike throughout in all their terminations, are of the same conjugation.

Verbs Conjugated.

[N. B. The Personal Pronouns *je, tu, il, nous, vous, ils*, represent the subject or nominatives to the different persons of the Tenses. The Pronouns *il, ils*, may be replaced by *elle* or *elles*, or the name of anything or person. Verbs may be conjugated *affirmatively, negatively, and interrogatively*.]

LXX. THE VERB AVOIR, to have.

AFFIRMATIVE FORM.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Avoir,</i>	to have.
<i>Part. pres.,</i>	<i>Ayant,</i>	having.
<i>Past part.,</i>	<i>Eu,*</i>	had.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>J'ai,</i>	I have.
<i>tu as,</i>	thou hast, you have.
<i>il a,</i>	he has, it has.
<i>nous avons,</i>	we have.
<i>vous avez,</i>	you have.
<i>ils ont,</i>	they have.

Imperfect.

<i>J'avais,</i>	I had.
<i>tu avais,</i>	thou hadst, you had.
<i>il avait,</i>	he had, it had.
<i>nous avions,</i>	we had.
<i>vous aviez,</i>	you had.
<i>ils avaient,</i>	they had.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>J'ai eu,</i>	I have had.
<i>tu as eu,</i>	thou hast, you have, had.
<i>il a eu,</i>	he, it, has had.
<i>nous avons eu,</i>	we have had.
<i>vous avez eu,</i>	you have had.
<i>ils ont eu,</i>	they have had.

Preterite Definite.

<i>J'eus,</i>	I had.
<i>tu eus,</i>	thou hadst, you had.
<i>il eut,</i>	he, it had.
<i>nous eûmes,</i>	we had.
<i>vous eûtes,</i>	you had.
<i>ils eurent,</i>	they had.

* The *participle past* has, like an adjective, a masculine and a feminine, a singular and a plural; thus, *eu, eue; eus, eues*.

Future.

*J'aurai,
tu auras,
il aura,
nous aurons,
vous aurez,
ils auront,*

I shall have.
thou shalt have, you shall have.
he shall have.
we shall have.
you shall have.
they shall have.

Conditional.

*J'aurais,
tu aurais,
il aurait,
nous aurions,
vous auriez,
ils auraient,*

I would have.
thou wouldst have, you would have.
he, it would have.
we would have.
you would have.
they would have.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que j'aie,
que tu aies,
qu'il ait,
que nous ayons,
que vous ayez,
qu'ils aient,*

that I have.
that thou hast, that you have.
that he, it have.
that we have.
that you have.
that they have.

Imperfect.

*Que j'eusse,
que tu eusses,
qu'il eût,
que nous eussions,
que vous eussiez,
qu'ils eussent,*

that I had, might or should have.
that thou hadst, that you had, &c.
that he, it had, &c.
that we had, &c.
that you had, &c.
that they had, &c.

IMPERATIVE.

*Aie,
qu'il ait,
ayons,
ayez,
qu'ils aient,*

have.
let him, it have.
let us have.
have.
let them have.

LXXI. Verbs are made *negative* by the help of the negative particles *ne* and *pas*.

NEGATIVE FORM.

N'avoir pas, or *ne pas avoir*, not to have ; *n'ayant pas*, not having.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Je n'ai pas,
tu n'as pas,
il n'a pas,
nous n'avons pas,
vous n'avez pas,
ils n'ont pas,

I have not.
thou hast not, you have not.
he, it has not.
we have not.
you have not.
they have not.

Imperfect.

Je n'avais pas,
tu n'avais pas,
il n'avait pas,
nous n'avions pas,
vous n'aviez pas,
ils n'avaient pas,

I had not.
thou hadst not, you had not.
he, it had not.
we had not.
you had not.
they had not.

Preterite Indefinite.

Je n'ai pas eu,
tu n'as pas eu,
il n'a pas eu,
nous n'avons pas eu,
vous n'avez pas eu,
ils n'ont pas eu,

I have not had.
thou hast not had.
he has not had.
we have not had.
you have not had.
they have not had.

Preterite Definite.

Je n'eus pas,
tu n'eus pas,
il n'eut pas,
nous n'eûmes pas,
vous n'eûtes pas,
ils n'eurent pas,

I had not.
thou hadst not, you had not.
he, it had not.
we had not.
you had not.
they had not.

Future.

Je n'aurai pas,
tu n'auras pas,
il n'aura pas,
nous n'aurons pas,
vous n'aurez pas,
ls n'auront pas,

I shall not have.
thou shalt not have.
he, it shall not have.
we shall not have.
you shall not have.
they shall not have.

Conditional.

*Je n'aurais pas,
tu n'aurais pas,
il n'aurait pas,
nous n'aurions pas,
vous n'auriez pas,
ils n'auraient pas,*

I should not have.
you should not have.
he, it would not have.
we would not have.
you would not have.
they would not have.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je n'aie pas,
que tu n'aies pas,
qu'il n'ait pas,
que nous n'ayons pas,
que vous n'ayez pas,
qu'ils n'aient pas,*

that I have not. [not.
that thou hast not, that you have
that he have not, that it have not.
that we have not.
that you have not.
that they have not.

Imperfect.

*Que je n'eusse pas,
que tu n'eusses pas,
qu'il n'eût pas,
que nous n'eussions pas,
que vous n'eussiez pas,
qu'ils n'eussent pas,*

that I had not. [not.
that thou hadst not, that you had
that he had not, that it had not.
that we had not.
that you had not.
that they had not.

IMPERATIVE.

*N'aie pas,
qu'il n'ait pas,
n'ayons pas,
n'ayez pas,
qu'ils n'aient pas,*

have not, or do not have.
that he have not.
let us not have.
have not, do not have.
let them not have.

LXXII. A Verb is *interrogative* when it is followed by its nominative or subject. The nominative that follows the Verb in French is always a Personal Pronoun, unless the Verb be preceded by *combien*, *quand*, *que*, *quel*; in which case it may be followed by any Noun.

INTERROGATIVE FORM.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>Ai-je ?</i>	have I ?
<i>as-tu ?</i>	hast thou ? have you ?
<i>a-t-il ?</i>	has he ?
<i>avons-nous ?</i>	have we ?
<i>avez-vous ?</i>	have you ?
<i>ont-ils ?</i>	have they ?

Imperfect.

<i>Avais-je ?</i>	had I ?
<i>avais-tu ?</i>	hadst thou ? had you ?
<i>avait-il ?</i>	had he ? had it ?
<i>avons-nous ?</i>	had we ?
<i>aviez-vous ?</i>	had you ?
<i>avaient-ils ?</i>	had they ?

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>Ai-je eu ?</i>	have I had ?
<i>as-tu eu ?</i>	hast thou had ?
<i>a-t-il eu ?</i>	has he had ?
<i>avons-nous eu ?</i>	have we had ?
<i>avez-vous eu ?</i>	have you had ?
<i>ont-ils eu ?</i>	have they had.

Preterite Definite.

<i>Eus-je ?</i>	had I ?
<i>eus-tu ?</i>	hadst thou ? had you ?
<i>eut-il ?</i>	had he ?
<i>eûmes-nous ?</i>	had we ?
<i>eûtes-vous ?</i>	had you ?
<i>eurent-ils ?</i>	had they ?

Future.

<i>Aurai-je ?</i>	shall I have ?
<i>auras-tu ?</i>	shall you have ?
<i>aura-t-il ?</i>	shall he have ?
<i>aurons-nous ?</i>	shall we have ?
<i>aurez-vous ?</i>	shall you have ?
<i>auront-ils ?</i>	shall they have ?

Conditional.

<i>Aurais-je ?</i>	should I have ?
<i>aurais-tu ?</i>	should you have ?
<i>aurait-il ?</i>	should he have ? should it have ?
<i>aurions-nous ?</i>	should we have ?
<i>auriez-vous ?</i>	should you have ?
<i>auraient-ils ?</i>	should they have ?

The interrogative form cannot exist in the *Subjunctive* or *Imperative*.

— — —

LXXIII. INTERROGATIVE AND NEGATIVE FORM.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>N'ai-je pas ?</i>	have I not ?
<i>n'as-tu pas ?</i>	have you not ?
<i>n'a-t-il pas ?</i>	has he not ?
<i>n'avons-nous pas ?</i>	have we not ?
<i>n'avez-vous pas ?</i>	have you not ?
<i>n'ont-ils pas ?</i>	have they not ?

Imperfect.

<i>N'avais-je pas ?</i>	had I not ?
<i>n'avais-tu pas ?</i>	had you not ?
<i>n'avait-il pas ?</i>	had he not ?
<i>n'avions-nous pas ?</i>	had we not ?
<i>n'aviez-vous pas ?</i>	had you not ?
<i>n'avaient-ils pas ?</i>	had they not ?

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>N'ai-je pas eu ?</i>	have I not had ?
<i>n'as-tu pas eu ?</i>	hast thou not had ?
<i>n'a-t-il pas eu ?</i>	has he not had ?
<i>n'avons-nous pas eu ?</i>	have we not had ?
<i>n'avez-vous pas eu ?</i>	have you not had ?
<i>n'ont-ils pas eu ?</i>	have they not had ?

Preterite Definite.

<i>N'eus-je pas ?</i>	had I not ?
<i>n'eus-tu pas ?</i>	had you not ?
<i>n'eut-il pas ?</i>	had he not ? had it not ?
<i>n'eûmes-nous pas ?</i>	had we not ?
<i>n'eûtes-vous pas ?</i>	had you not ?
<i>n'eurent-ils pas ?</i>	had they not ?

Future.

N'aurai-je pas ?
n'auras-tu pas ?
n'aura-t-il pas ?
n'aurons-nous pas ?
n'aurez-vous pas ?
n'auront-ils pas ?

shall I not have ?
 shall you not have ?
 shall he not have ?
 shall we not have ?
 shall you not have ?
 shall they not have ?

Conditional.

N'aurais-je pas ?
n'aurais-tu pas ?
n'aurait-il pas ?
n'aurions-nous pas ?
n'auriez-vous pas ?
n'auraient-ils pas ?

should I not have ?
 should you not have ?
 should he not have ?
 should we not have ?
 should you not have ?
 should they not have ?

Compound Forms of Verbs.

LXXIV. A Tense composed of an auxiliary Verb, (*avoir* or *être*.) and a past participle, is a compound tense. In French, these tenses are always past tenses. Any simple part of a Verb may adopt a compound form, and be rendered past by changing itself into the same part of the auxiliary, followed by its own past participle. The compound forms of *avoir* will illustrate this.

Avoir, to have.
Ayant, having.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Avoir eu,
Ayant eu,
J'ai eu,
tu as eu,
il a eu,
nous avons eu,
vous avez eu,
ils ont eu,
J'avais eu,
tu avais eu,
il avait eu,
nous avions eu,
vous aviez eu,
ils avaient eu,

to have had.
 having had.
 I have had.
 thou hast had.
 he has had, it has had.
 we have had.
 you have had.
 they have had.
 I had had.
 thou hadst had.
 he had had.
 we had had.
 you had had.
 they had had.

Future Compound.

*J'aurai eu,
tu auras eu,
il aura eu,
nous aurons eu,
vous aurez eu,
ils auront eu,*

I shall have had.
you shall have had.
he shall have had.
we shall have had.
you shall have had.
they shall have had.

Compound Conditional.

*J'aurais eu,
tu aurais eu,
il aurait eu,
nous aurions eu,
vous auriez eu,
ils auraient eu,*

I should have had.
thou should'st have had.
he should have had.
we should have had.
you should have had.
they should have had.

Compound Present Subjunctive.

*Que j'aie eu,
que tu aies eu,
qu'il ait eu,
que nous ayons eu,
que vous ayez eu,
qu'ils aient eu,*

that I may have had.
that you may have had.
that he may have had.
that we may have had.
that you may have had.
that they may have had.

Compound Past Subjunctive.

*Que j'eusse eu,
que tu eusses eu,
qu'il eût eu,
que nous eussions eu,
que vous eussiez eu,
qu'ils eussent eu,*

that I might have had.
that you might have had.
that he might have had.
that we might have had.
that you might have had.
that they might have had.

The compound form of the *Imperative* would have too little sense to require mention.

The Negative Forms.

(First Persons only given.)

N'avoir pas eu,

not to have had.

N'ayant pas eu,

not having had.

*Je n'ai pas eu,
je n'avais pas eu,
je n'eus pas eu,
je n'aurai pas eu,
je n'aurais pas eu,
que je n'aie pas eu,
que je n'eusse pas eu,*

I have not had.
I had not had.
I had not had.
I shall not have had.
I would not have had.
that I may not have had.
that I might not have had.

INTERROGATIVE COMPOUND FORM.

<i> Ai-je eu ?</i>	have I had ?
<i> avais-je eu ?</i>	had I had ?
<i> eus-je eu ?</i>	had I had ?
<i> aurai-je eu ?</i>	shall I have had ?
<i> aurais-je eu ?</i>	should I have had ?

NEGATIVELY.

<i> N'ai-je pas eu ?</i>	have I not had ?
<i> n'avais-je pas eu ?</i>	had I not had ?
<i> n'eus-je pas eu ?</i>	had I not had ?
<i> n'aurai-je pas eu ?</i>	shall I not have had ?
<i> n'aurais-je pas eu ?</i>	should I not have had ?

LXXV. THE VERB ÊTRE, to be.

<i> Infinitive,</i>	<i> Être,</i>	to be,
<i> Part. pres.</i>	<i> Étant,</i>	being.
<i> Part. past,</i>	<i> Été,*</i>	been.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i> Je suis,</i>	I am.
<i> tu es,</i>	thou art, you are.
<i> il est,</i>	he is, it is.
<i> nous sommes,</i>	we are.
<i> vous êtes,</i>	you are.
<i> ils sont,</i>	they are.

Imperfect.

<i> J'étais,</i>	I was.
<i> tu étais,</i>	thou wert, you were.
<i> il était,</i>	he was, it was.
<i> nous étions,</i>	we were.
<i> vous étiez,</i>	you were.
<i> ils étaient,</i>	they were.

* *Été* never alters its termination.

Preterite Indefinite.

*J'ai été,
tu as été,
il a été,
nous avons été,
vous avez été,
ils ont été,*

I have been.
thou hast been.
he has been.
we have been.
you have been.
they have been.

Preterite Definite.

*Je fus,
tu fus,
il fut,
nous fûmes,
vous fûtes,
ils furent,*

I was.
thou wert, you were.
he was, it was.
we were.
you were.
they were.

Future.

*Je serai,
tu seras,
il sera,
nous serons,
vous serez,
ils seront,*

I shall be.
thou shalt be, you shall be.
he shall be, it shall be.
we shall be.
you will be.
they will be.

Conditional.

*Je serais,
tu serais,
il serait,
nous serions,
vous seriez,
ils seraient,*

I would be.
thou wouldst, you would be.
he would be, it would be.
we would be.
you would be.
they would be.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je sois,
que tu sois,
qu'il soit,
que nous soyons,
que vous soyez,
qu'ils soient,*

that I be.
that thou be, that you be.
that he be, that it be.
that we be.
that you be.
that they be.

Imperfect.

*Que je fusse,
que tu fusses,
qu'il fût,
que nous fussions,
que vous fussiez,
qu'ils fussent,*

that I might be.
that thou mightest be, that you
that he might be. [might be.
that we might be.
that you might be.
that they might be.

IMPERATIVE.

*Sois,
qu'il soit,
soyons,
soyez,
qu'ils soient,*

be.
let him be, let it be.
let us be.
be.
let them be.

NEGATIVE FORM.

N'être pas, not to be.
N'étant pas, not being.

INDICATIVE.*Present.*

*Je ne suis pas,
tu n'es pas,
il n'est pas,
nous ne sommes pas,
vous n'êtes pas,
ils ne sont pas,*

I am not.
thou art not, you are not.
he is not, it is not.
we are not.
you are not.
they are not.

Imperfect.

*Je n'étais pas,
tu n'étais pas,
il n'était pas,
nous n'étions pas,
vous n'étiez pas,
ils n'étaient pas,*

I was not.
thou wert not.
he was not.
we were not.
you were not.
they were not.

Preterite Indefinite.

*Je n'ai pas été,
tu n'as pas été,
il n'a pas été,
nous n'avons pas été,
vous n'avez pas été,
ils n'ont pas été,*

I have not been.
you have not been.
he has not been.
we have not been.
you have not been.
they have not been.

Preterite Definite.

*Je ne fus pas,
tu ne fus pas,
il ne fut pas,
nous ne fûmes pas,
vous ne fûtes pas,
ils ne furent pas,*

I was not.
thou wert not.
he was not.
we were not.
you were not.
they were not.

Future.

*Je ne serai pas,
tu ne seras pas,
il ne sera pas,
nous ne serons pas,
vous ne serez pas,
ils ne seront pas,*

I shall not be.
thou shalt not be.
he will not be.
we will not be.
you shall not be.
they will not be.

Conditional.

*Je ne serais pas,
tu ne serais pas,
il ne serait pas,
nous ne serions pas,
vous ne seriez pas,
ils ne seraient pas,*

I would not be.
thou could'st not be.
he would not be.
we would not be.
you would not be.
they would not be.

SUBJUNCTIVE.*Present.*

*Que je ne sois pas,
que tu ne sois pas,
qu'il ne soit pas,
que nous ne soyons pas,
que vous ne soyez pas,
qu'ils ne soient pas,*

that I may not be.
that thou may'st not be.
that he may not be.
that we may not be.
that you may not be.
that they may not be.

Imperfect.

*Que je ne fusse pas,
que tu ne fusses pas,
qu'il ne fût pas,
que nous ne fussions pas,
que vous ne fussiez pas,
qu'ils ne fussent pas,*

that I might not be.
that thou mightest not be.
that he might not be.
that we might not be.
that you might not be.
that they might not be.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Ne sois pas,</i>	do not be.
<i>qu'il ne soit pas,</i>	let him not be.
<i>ne soyons pas,</i>	let us not be.
<i>ne soyez pas,</i>	do not be.
<i>qu'ils ne soient pas,</i>	let them not be.

INTERROGATIVE FORM.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>Suis-je ?</i>	am I ?
<i>es-tu ?</i>	art thou ? are you ?
<i>est-il ?</i>	is he ? is it ?
<i>est-elle ?</i>	is she ? is it ?
<i>sommes-nous ?</i>	are we ?
<i>êtes-vous ?</i>	are you ?
<i>sont-ils ?</i>	} are they ?
<i>sont-elles ?</i>	

Imperfect.

<i>Étais-je ?</i>	Was I ?
<i>étais-tu ?</i>	wast thou ?
<i>était-il ?</i>	was he ?
<i>étions-nous ?</i>	were we ?
<i>étiez-vous ?</i>	were you ?
<i>étaient-ils ?</i>	were they ?

Preterite Indefinite.

<i> Ai-je été ?</i>	have I been ?
<i>as-tu été ?</i>	hast thou been ?
<i>a-t-il été ?</i>	has he been ?
<i>avons-nous été ?</i>	have we been ?
<i>avez-vous été ?</i>	have you been ?
<i>ont-ils été ?</i>	have they been ?

Preterite Definite.

<i>Fus-je ?</i>	was I ?
<i>fus-tu ?</i>	wert thou ?
<i>fut-il ?</i>	was he ?
<i>fûmes-nous ?</i>	were we ?
<i>fûtes-vous ?</i>	were you ?
<i>furent-ils ?</i>	were they ?

Future.

<i>Serai-je ?</i>	shall I be ?
<i>seras-tu ?</i>	shalt thou be ?
<i>sera-t-il ?</i>	shall he be ?
<i>serons-nous ?</i>	shall we be ?
<i>serez-vous ?</i>	shall you be ?
<i>seront-ils ?</i>	shall they be ?

Conditional.

<i>Serais-je ?</i>	should I be ?
<i>serais-tu ?</i>	shouldst thou be ?
<i>serait-il ?</i>	should he be ?
<i>serions-nous ?</i>	should we be ?
<i>seriez-vous ?</i>	should you be ?
<i>seraient-ils ?</i>	should they be ?

INTERROGATIVE AND NEGATIVE FORM.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>Ne suis-je pas ?</i>	am I not ?
<i>n'es-tu pas ?</i>	art thou not ?
<i>n'est-il pas ?</i>	is he not ? is it not ?
<i>n'est-elle pas ?</i>	is she not ? is it not ?
<i>ne sommes-nous pas ?</i>	are we not ?
<i>n'êtes-vous pas ?</i>	are you not ?
<i>ne sont-ils pas ?</i>	} are they not ?
<i>ne sont-elles pas ?</i>	

Imperfect.

<i>N'étais-je pas ?</i>	was I not ?
<i>n'étais-tu pas ?</i>	wert thou not ?
<i>n'était-il pas ?</i>	was he not ?
<i>n'étions-nous pas ?</i>	were we not ?
<i>n'étiez-vous pas ?</i>	were you not ?
<i>n'étaient-ils pas ?</i>	were they not ?

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>N'ai-je pas été ?</i>	have I not been ?
<i>n'as-tu pas été ?</i>	hast thou not been ?
<i>n'a-t-il pas été ?</i>	has he not been ?
<i>n'avons-nous pas été ?</i>	have we not been ?
<i>n'avez-vous pas été ?</i>	have you not been ?
<i>n'ont-ils pas été ?</i>	have they not been ?

Preterite Definite.

<i>Ne fus-je pas ?</i>	was I not ?
<i>ne fus-tu pas ?</i>	wert thou not ?
<i>ne fut-il pas ?</i>	was he not ?
<i>ne fûmes-nous pas ?</i>	were we not ?
<i>ne fûtes-vous pas ?</i>	were you not ?
<i>ne furent-ils pas ?</i>	were they not ?

Future.

<i>Ne serai-je pas ?</i>	shall I not be ?
<i>ne seras-tu pas ?</i>	shalt thou not be ?
<i>ne sera-t-il pas ?</i>	shall he not be ?
<i>ne serons-nous pas ?</i>	shall we not be ?
<i>ne serez-vous pas ?</i>	shall you not be ?
<i>ne seront-ils pas ?</i>	shall they not be ?

Conditional.

<i>Ne serais-je pas ?</i>	should I not be ?
<i>ne serais-tu pas ?</i>	shouldst thou not be ?
<i>ne serait-il pas ?</i>	should he not be ?
<i>ne serions-nous pas ?</i>	should we not be ?
<i>ne seriez-vous pas ?</i>	should you not be ?
<i>ne seraient-ils pas ?</i>	should they not be ?

[*N. B.* In matters of conjugation, Verbs are either *regular* or *irregular*.]

LXXVI. A *regular* Verb is one that forms its tenses according to given rules.

The parts of a *regular* Verb are thus derived :—The *Future* and *Conditional* from the *Infinitive* ; the *plural* of the *Present tense*, the *Imperfect Indicative*, the *Present Subjunctive*, and the *Third singular* and all the *plural* of the *Imperative*, from the *Present participle* ; the *Imperfect Subjunctive*, from the *Preterite Indicative* ; the other parts are primitive, and independent of rule. Verbs that deviate from these principles are *irregular*.

Avoir and *être* are *irregular* Verbs; but given thus at the outset, on account of their use in the conjugation of all other Verbs.

LXXVII. The *primitive* parts of a Verb are, the *Infinitive*, the *Present participle*, the *Past participle*, the *Singular of the Present tense*, and the *Preterite definite*.

The *secondary* parts are, the *Plural of the Present Indicative*, the *Imperfect Indicative*, the *Subjunctive Present*, the *Third singular and all the plural of the Imperative*, the *Future and Conditional*, and the *Imperfect Subjunctive*.

LXXVIII. All Verbs capable of governing a Noun or Pronoun in the *Accusative* or *Dative* cases may be conjugated pronominally and reflexively, that is, accompanied by a personal pronoun, referring to the Nominative, or subject, and agreeing with it in Person and Number. Whenever this is the case, the Verb in all its compound tenses takes *être* for its auxiliary, instead of, and in the sense of, *avoir*.

LXXIX. Many Neuter Verbs, signifying coming and going in or out, up or down, from or to, take *être* as an auxiliary in the compound tenses. The *participle past* then becomes an Adjective, and agrees with the subject of the Verb in gender and number.

LXXX. Conjugations.

1. Verbs ending in the *Infinitive* in *ER*.
 2. Verbs " " " " in *IR*.
 3. Verbs " " " " in *OIR*.
 4. Verbs " " " " in *RE*.
-

LXXXI. Verbs in *ER*.*Regular.*

<i>Infin.</i>	<i>Donner,</i>	to give.
<i>Part. pres.</i>	<i>Donnant,</i>	giving.
<i>Part. past,</i>	<i>Donné,</i>	given.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>Je donne,</i>	I give.
<i>tu donnes,</i>	thou givest.
<i>il donne,</i>	he, it gives.
<i>nous donnons,</i>	we give.
<i>vous donnez,</i>	you give.
<i>ils donnent,</i>	they give.

Imperfect.

<i>Je donnais,</i>	I gave.
<i>tu donnais,</i>	thou gavest.
<i>il donnait,</i>	he, it gave.
<i>nous donnions,</i>	we gave.
<i>vous donniez,</i>	you gave.
<i>ils donnaient,</i>	they gave.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>J'ai donné,</i>	I gave or have given.
<i>tu as donné,</i>	thou gavest or hast given.
<i>il a donné,</i>	he gave or has given.
<i>nous avons donné,</i>	we gave or have given.
<i>vous avez donné,</i>	you gave or have given.
<i>ils ont donné,</i>	they gave or have given.

Preterite Definite.

<i>Je donnai,</i>	I gave.
<i>tu donnas,</i>	thou gavest.
<i>il donna,</i>	he, it gave.
<i>nous donnâmes,</i>	we gave.
<i>vous donnâtes,</i>	you gave.
<i>ils donnèrent,</i>	they gave.

Preterpluperfect.

*J'avais donné,
tu avais donné,
il avait donné,
nous avions donné,
vous aviez donné,
ils avaient donné,*

I had	} given.
thou hadst	
he had	
we had	
you had	
they had	

Future.

*Je donnerai,
tu donneras,
il donnera,
nous donnerons,
vous donnerez,
ils donneront,*

I shall *or* will give.
thou shalt *or* wilt give.
he, it shall *or* will give.
we shall *or* will give.
you shall *or* will give.
they shall *or* will give.

Conditional.

*Je donnerais,
tu donnerais,
il donnerait,
nous donnerions,
vous donneriez,
ils donneraient,*

I would give.
thou would'st give.
he, it would give.
we would give.
you would give.
they would give.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je donne,
que tu donnes,
qu'il donne,
que nous donnions,
que vous donniez,
qu'ils donnent,*

that I give.
that thou givest.
that he give.
that we give.
that you give.
that they give.

Imperfect.

*Que je donnasse,
que tu donnasses,
qu'il donnât,
que nous donnassions,
que vous donnassiez,
qu'ils donnassent,*

that I gave *or* should give.
that thou gavest *or* should'st give.
that he gave *or* should give.
that we gave *or* should give.
that you gave *or* should give.
that they gave *or* should give.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Donne,</i>	give.
<i>qu'il donne,</i>	let him give.
<i>donnons,</i>	let us give.
<i>donnez,</i>	give.
<i>qu'ils donnent,</i>	let them give.

NEGATIVELY.

<i>Ne pas donner,</i>	not to give.
<i>ne donnant pas,</i>	not giving.

First Person of all Tenses.

<i>Je ne donne pas,</i>	I do not give.
<i>je ne donnais pas,</i>	I did not give.
<i>je ne donnai pas,</i>	I did not give.
<i>je ne donnerai pas,</i>	I will not give.
<i>je ne donnerais pas,</i>	I would not give.
<i>que je ne donne pas,</i>	that I give not.
<i>que je ne donnasse pas,</i>	that I gave not.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Ne donne pas,</i>	do not give.
<i>qu'il ne donne pas,</i>	let him not give.
<i>ne donnons pas,</i>	let us not give.
<i>ne donnez pas,</i>	do not give.
<i>qu'ils ne donnent pas,</i>	let them not give.

INTERROGATIVELY.

<i>Donné-je ?*</i>	do I give ?
<i>donnes-tu ?</i>	do you give ?
<i>donne-t-il ?</i>	does he give ?
<i>donnons-nous ?</i>	do we
<i>donnez-vous ?</i>	do you } give ?
<i>donnent-ils ?</i>	do they }
<i>Ne donné-je pas ?*</i>	do I not give ?
<i>ne donnes-tu pas ?</i>	dost thou not give ?
<i>ne donne-t-il pas ?</i>	does he not give ?
<i>ne donnons-nous pas ?</i>	do we not
<i>ne donnez-vous pas ?</i>	do you not } give ?
<i>ne donnent-ils pas ?</i>	do they not }

* This form is simply *euphonic*.

First Persons of other Tenses.

<i>Ne donnais-je pas ?</i>	did I not give ?
<i>ne donnai-je pas ?</i>	did I not give ?
<i>ne donnerai-je pas ?</i>	shall I not give ?
<i>ne donnerais-je pas ?</i>	should I not give ?

COMPOUND PARTS OF

DONNER.

<i>Avoir donné,</i>	to have given.
<i>ayant donné,</i>	having given.
<i>J'ai donné,</i>	I gave, or have given.
<i>j'avais donné,</i>	I had given.

INTERROGATIVELY.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>Ai-je donné ?</i>	have I given ?
<i>as-tu donné ?</i>	hast thou given ?
<i>a-t-il donné ?</i>	has he given ?
<i>a-t-elle donné ?</i>	has she given ?
<i>avons-nous donné ?</i>	have we given ?
<i>avez-vous donné ?</i>	have you given ?
<i>ont-ils donné ?</i>	} have they given ?
<i>ont-elles donné ?</i>	

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Avais-je donné ?</i>	had I given ?
<i>avais-tu donné ?</i>	hadst thou given ?
<i>avait-il } donné ?</i>	had he, she given ?
<i>avait-elle }</i>	
<i>avions-nous donné ?</i>	had we given ?
<i>aviez-vous donné ?</i>	had you given ?
<i>avaient-ils } donné ?</i>	had they given ?
<i>avaient-elles }</i>	
<i>Eus-je donné ?</i>	had I given ?
<i>aurai-je donné ?</i>	shall I have given ?
<i>aurais-je donné ?</i>	should I have given ?
<i>&c. &c.</i>	<i>&c. &c.</i>

NEGATIVELY.

<i>N'avoir pas donné,</i>	not to have given.
<i>n'ayant pas donné,</i>	not having given.
<i>Je n'ai pas donné,</i>	I have not given.
<i>je n'avais pas donné,</i>	I had not given.
<i>je n'eus pas donné,</i>	I had not given.
<i>je n'aurai pas donné,</i>	I shall not have given.
<i>je n'aurais pas donné,</i>	I should not have given.
<i>que je n'aie pas donné,</i>	that I may not have given.
<i>que je n'eusse pas donné,</i>	that I might not have given.

INTERROGATIVE AND NEGATIVE FORM.

<i>N'ai-je pas donné ?</i>	have I not given ?
<i>n'as-tu pas donné ?</i>	hast thou not given ?
<i>n'a-t-il pas donné ?</i>	has he not given ?
<i>n'a-t-elle pas donné ?</i>	has she not given ?
<i>n'avons-nous pas donné ?</i>	have we not given ?
<i>n'avez-vous pas donné ?</i>	have you not given ?
<i>n'ont-ils pas donné ?</i>	} have they not given ?
<i>n'ont-elles pas donné ?</i>	

Preterpluperfect.

<i>N'avais-je pas donné ?</i>	had I not	} given ?
<i>n'avais-tu pas donné ?</i>	hadst thou not	
<i>n'avait-il pas donné ?</i>	had he not	
<i>n'avait-elle pas donné ?</i>	had she not	
<i>n'avions-nous pas donné ?</i>	had we not	
<i>n'aviez-vous pas donné ?</i>	had you not	
<i>n'avaient-ils pas } donné ?</i>	had they not	
<i>n'avaient-elles pas }</i>		

First Persons of other Compound Tenses.

<i>N'eus-je pas</i>	} donné ?	had I not	} given ?
<i>n'aurai-je pas</i>		shall I not have	
<i>n'aurais-je pas</i>		should I not have	
<i>que je n'aie pas</i>		that I may not have	
<i>que je n'eusse pas</i>		that I might not have	

LXXXII. PRONOMINAL or REFLEXIVE CONJUGATION
OF A VERB IN *ER*.

<i>Se contenter,</i>	to content oneself or to be satisfied.
<i>se contentant,</i>	being satisfied.
<i>contenté,</i>	satisfied.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.

<i>Je me contente,</i>	I content myself, or am satisfied.
<i>tu te contentes,</i>	thou contentest thyself, or art satisfied.
<i>il se contente,</i>	he contents himself, or is satisfied.
<i>nous nous contentons,</i>	we content ourselves, or are satisfied.
<i>vous vous contentez,</i>	you content yourselves, or are satisfied.
<i>ils se contentent,</i>	they content themselves, or are satisfied.

All the other simple *Tenses* of the *Indicative* and *Subjunctive Moods* may be conjugated like *Donner*, with the addition of the Pronouns *me, te, se, nous, vous, se*, between the Nominative and the Verb.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>Contente-toi,</i>	content thyself.
<i>qu'il se contente,</i>	let him content himself.
<i>contentons-nous,</i>	let us content ourselves.
<i>contentez-vous,</i>	content yourselves.
<i>qu'ils se contentent,</i>	let them content themselves.

LXXXIII. Compound Forms.

<i>S'être</i> { <i>contenté,</i> <i>contentés,</i> <i>contentée,</i> <i>contentées,</i> }	to have contented oneself or themselves.
<i>S'étant contenté, és, ée, ées,</i>	having contented oneself, &c.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>Je me suis contenté or contentée,</i>	I have contented myself.
<i>tu t'es contenté or contentée,</i>	thou hast contented thyself.
<i>il s'est contenté,</i>	he has contented himself.
<i>elle s'est contentée,</i>	she has contented herself.
<i>nous nous sommes contentés or contentées,</i>	} we have contented ourselves.
<i>vous vous êtes contentés or contentées,</i>	
<i>ils se sont contentés,</i>	} you have contented yourselves.
<i>elles se sont contentées,</i>	
	} they have contented themselves.

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Je m'étais contenté,</i>	I had satisfied myself.
<i>tu t'étais contenté,</i>	thou hadst, &c.
<i>il s'était contenté,</i>	he had, &c.
<i>nous nous étions contentés,</i>	we had, &c.
<i>vous vous étiez contentés,</i>	you had, &c.
<i>ils s'étaient contentés,</i>	they had, &c.

NEGATIVE FORM.

<i>Ne pas se contenter,</i>	not to be satisfied.
<i>Ne se contentant pas,</i>	not being satisfied.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.

<i>Je ne me contente pas,</i>	I am not	} satisfied.
<i>tu ne te contentes pas,</i>	thou art not	
<i>il ne se contente pas,</i>	he is not	
<i>nous ne nous contentons pas,</i>	we are not	
<i>vous ne vous contentez pas,</i>	you are not	
<i>ils ne se contentent pas,</i>	they are not	

All other Tenses of the *Indicative* and *Subjunctive* in the same way.

NEGATIVELY.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Ne te contente pas,</i>	do not content yourself.
<i>qu'il ne se contente pas,</i>	let him not content himself.
<i>ne nous contentons pas,</i>	let us not content ourselves.
<i>ne vous contentez pas,</i>	do not content yourselves.
<i>qu'ils ne se contentent pas,</i>	let them not content themselves

COMPOUND FORMS NEGATIVELY.

Ne pas s'être contenté, ée, és, ées, not to have been satisfied.

Ne s'étant pas contenté, &c. not having been satisfied.

<i>Je ne me suis pas contenté, ée,</i>	I have not	} been satisfied.
<i>tu ne t'es pas contenté, ée,</i>	thou hast not	
<i>il ne s'est pas contenté, 'e,</i>	he has not	
<i>elle ne s'est pas contentée,</i>	she has not	
<i>nous ne nous sommes pas contentés,</i>		
<i>ées,</i>	we have not	
<i>vous ne vous êtes pas contentés, ées,</i>	you have not	}
<i>ils ne se sont pas contentés,</i>	they have not	
<i>elles ne se sont pas contentées,</i>		

PRETERPLUPERFECT NEGATIVELY.

<i>Je ne m'étais pas contenté,</i>	} I had not, you had not, we had
<i>tu ne t'étais pas contenté,</i>	
<i>il ne s'était pas contenté,</i>	
<i>nous ne nous étions pas con-</i>	
<i>tentés,</i>	
<i>vous ne vous étiez pas conten-</i>	} not, &c. contented ourselves.
<i>tés,</i>	
<i>ils ne s'élevaient pas contentés,</i>	

INTERROGATIVE FORM.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.

<i>Me contenté-je ?</i>	do I content myself ?
<i>te contentes-tu ?</i>	dost thou content thyself ?
<i>se contente-t-il ?</i>	does he content himself ?
<i>nous contentons-nous ?</i>	do we content ourselves ?
<i>vous contentez-vous ?</i>	do you content yourselves ?
<i>se contentent-ils ?</i>	do they content themselves ?

Imperfect.

<i>Me contentais-je ?</i>	was I satisfied ?
---------------------------	-------------------

Preterite Definite.

<i>Me contentai-je ?</i>	did I content myself ?
--------------------------	------------------------

Future.

<i>Me contenterai-je ?</i>	shall I content myself ?
----------------------------	--------------------------

Conditional.

Me contenterais-je ? should I content myself ?

COMPOUND TENSES.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>Me suis-je contenté, ée ?</i>	was I content ?
<i>t'es-tu contenté ?</i>	wert thou content ?
<i>s'est-il contenté ?</i>	did he content himself ?
<i>s'est-elle contentée ?</i>	did she content herself ?
<i>nous sommes-nous contentés, ées ?</i>	were we content ?
<i>vous êtes-vous contentés ?</i>	were you satisfied ?
<i>se sont-ils contentés ?</i>	} were they content ?
<i>se sont-elles contentées ?</i>	

Preterpluperfect.

<i>M'étais je contenté, ée ?</i>	had I satisfied myself ?
<i>t'étais-tu contenté ?</i>	hadst thou, &c. ?
<i>s'était-il contenté ?</i>	had he, &c. ?
<i>s'était-elle contentée ?</i>	had she, &c. ?
<i>nous étions-nous contentés, ées ?</i>	had we, &c. ?
<i>vous étiez-vous contentés ?</i>	had you, &c. ?
<i>s'étaient-ils contentés ?</i>	} had they, &c. ?
<i>s'étaient-elles contentées ?</i>	

LXXXIV. INTERROGATIVE AND NEGATIVE FORM.

First Persons only given.

<i>Ne me contenté-je pas, &c. ?</i>	do I not content myself ?
<i>ne me contentais-je pas, &c. ?</i>	did I not content myself ?
<i>ne me suis-je pas contenté, &c. ?</i>	did I not content myself ?
<i>ne m'étais-je pas contenté, &c. ?</i>	had I not contented myself ?

LXXXV. *In the same way Conjugate*

S' INFORMER, to inform oneself, or inquire.

<i>Je m'informe,</i>	I inquire.
<i>tu t'informes, &c.</i>	you inquire.
<i>je m'informais, &c.</i>	I was inquiring.
<i>je me suis informé, &c.</i>	I have inquired.
<i>je m'étais informé,</i>	I had inquired.
<i>informe toi,</i>	inquire.
<i>qu'il s'informe, &c.</i>	let him inquire.

Je ne m'informe pas, &c.
m'informé-je, &c. ?
me suis-je informé ?
ne m'informé-je pas ?
ne me suis-je pas informé ?

I do not inquire.
 am I inquiring ?
 did I inquire ?
 do I not inquire ?
 did I not inquire ?

Observe, that the vowel of the monosyllabic Pronoun is cut off before the vowel that begins the Verb.

LXXXVI. The Verb ENTRER, to enter.

Entrer in all its simple tenses is conjugated like *Donner*.

Entrer, to enter.
Entrant, entering.
Entré, ée, és, ées, entered.

J'entre,
tu entres,
il entre,
nous entrons,
vous entrez,
ils entrent,

I enter.
 thou enterest.
 he enters.
 we enter.
 you enter.
 they enter.

J'entrais,
tu entraais,
il entraait,
nous entrions,
vous entriez,
ils entraient,

I was entering.
 thou wast entering.
 he was entering.
 we were entering.
 you were entering.
 they were entering.

Entrer being a verb of *coming, going, &c.* adopts the verb *être* as auxiliary in its compound tenses.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Etre entré, ée, és, ées, to have entered.
Etant entré, &c. having entered.

Preterite Indefinite.

Je suis entré, or ée,
tu es entré, or ée,
il est entré,
elle est entrée,
nous sommes entrés, or ées,
vous êtes entrés, or ées,
ils sont entrés,
elles sont entrées,

I entered.
 thou hast entered.
 he entered.
 she entered.
 we entered.
 you entered.
 } they entered.

Preterpluperfect.

<i>J'étais entré,</i>	} <i>ée,</i>	I had	} entered.
<i>tu étais entré,</i>		thou hadst	
<i>il était entré,</i>		he had	
<i>nous étions entrés,</i>	} <i>ées,</i>	we had	
<i>vous étiez entrés,</i>		you had	
<i>ils étaient entrés,</i>		they had	

The rest on the same principle.

LXXXVII. Irregularities of the First Conjugation.

N.B.—*ER* is the termination of the Verbs of this Conjugation. All that precedes the termination is the Root of the Verb. The Root should be invariable, both in sound and spelling, in regular Verbs; but the termination which varies may affect the pronunciation of the Root, which in certain parts of the Verb must be altered, to recover the original sound. Thence, with two exceptions, the irregularities of the first Conjugation, which are simply *euphonic*.

LXXXVIII. The irregularities occur in Verbs ending in

<i>CER,</i>	<i>ÉGNER,</i>
<i>GER,</i>	<i>EMER,</i>
<i>ÉCER,</i>	<i>ÉRER,</i>
<i>ÉCHER,</i>	<i>EQUER,</i>
<i>EDER,</i>	<i>ETER,</i>
<i>ÉDER,</i>	<i>ÉTER,</i>
<i>ELER,</i>	<i>EVER,</i>
<i>ÉLER,</i>	<i>AYER,</i>
<i>ENER,</i>	<i>OYER,</i>
<i>ÉNER,</i>	<i>UYER.</i>

LXXXIX. *C* and *G*, soft in the Root by nature, must be softened when an *A* or an *O* would follow them.

In all the other varieties, the penultimate (the last syllable but one) of the *Infinitive* has to be altered from the original in those parts of the Verb where the *E* of the termination of the *Infinitive* would become mute.

CER.

XC. *C* is softened by the cedilla, whenever an *A* or an *O* would have to follow the root of the Verb: as for instance—

MENACER.

First Person Plural Present,	<i>Menaçons.</i>
Imperfect Tense, all Singular and Third Plural,	<i>Menaçais,</i> <i>menaçais,</i> <i>menaçait,</i> <i>menaçaient.</i>
All the Singular, 1st and 2nd Plural of Preterite Definite,	<i>Menaçai,</i> <i>menaças,</i> <i>menaça,</i> <i>menaçâmes,</i> <i>menaçâtes.</i>
All the Imperfect Subjunctive,	<i>Menaçasse,</i> <i>menaçasses,</i> <i>menaçât,</i> <i>menaçassions,</i> <i>menaçassiez,</i> <i>menaçassent.</i>
First Plural Imperative,	<i>Menaçons.</i>

GER.

XCI. *G*, naturally soft in the Root, is followed by *E* before *A* or *O*: as for instance—

MANGER.

First Plural Pres. and Imperative,	<i>Mangeons.</i>
Imperfect, all Singular and Third Plural,	<i>Mangeais,</i> <i>mangeais,</i> <i>mangeait,</i> <i>mangeaient.</i>
All Preterite Definite, except Third Plural,	<i>Mangeai,</i> <i>mangeas,</i> <i>mangea,</i> <i>mangeâmes,</i> <i>mangeâtes.</i>

Imperfect Subjunctive,	{ <i>Mangeasse,</i> <i>mangeasses,</i> <i>mangeât,</i> <i>mangeassions,</i> <i>mangeassiez,</i> <i>mangeassent.</i>
------------------------	--

ÉDER.

I. The *e* (*aigu*) of the root becomes *è* (*grave*) when-
e *e* of the termination (*er*) becomes mute: as for
e--

POSSÉDER.

Indicative and Imperative, Singular and Third Plural,	{ <i>Possède,</i> <i>possèdes,</i> <i>possède,</i> <i>possèdent.</i>
, and Conditional, all through,	{ <i>Possèderai.</i> <i>possèderais.</i>
Subjunctive Singular, and Third Plural,	{ <i>Possède,</i> <i>possèdes,</i> <i>possède,</i> <i>possèdent.</i>

ELER.

II. The *L* is doubled whenever the *e* of the termina-
r) becomes mute. Instance:—

APPELER.

Indicative Singular, and Third Plural,	{ <i>Appelle,</i> <i>appelles,</i> <i>appelle,</i> <i>appellent.</i>
, and Conditional, all through,	{ <i>Appellerai, &c.</i> <i>appellerais, &c.</i>
Infinitive Singular, and Third Plural,	{ <i>Appelle,</i> <i>appelles,</i> <i>appelle,</i> <i>appellent.</i>

We adopt a grave *è* in the same parts in which *appeler*
a double *l*; as, *geler*, to freeze, *je gèle, je gèlerai.*

XCIV. *ENER, ÉNER, EMER, ÉRER, ÉQUER, EVER*, follow the rule of *ÉDER*; as—

MENER, to lead.

*Je mène,
tu mènes,
ils mènent,
je mènerai.*

CONSIDÉRER, to consider.

*Je considère,
ils considèrent,
je considérerai.*

XCV. *ETER* has some, like *Jeter* and its derivatives, in which the *t* is doubled in the before-mentioned parts; as—

JETER, to throw.

*Je jette,
ils jettent,
je jetterai.*

Others adopt the grave accent in the same part, instead of the second *t*; as—

ACHETER, to buy.

*J'achète,
ils achètent,
j'achèterai.*

XCVI. *AYER, OYER, UYER*. In these terminations, the *y* becomes *i* before the *e* mute; as—

PAYER, to pay.

*Je paie,
ils paient,
je paierai.*

EMPLOYER, to employ.

*J'emploie,
ils emploient,
j'emploierai.*

ENNUYER, to bore, trouble.

*J'ennuie,
ils ennuiant,
j'ennuierai.*

N. B. In the termination of *yer*, it is optional to use or disregard the irregular forms.

XCVII. Irregular Verbs of the First Conjugation.

ALLER,

Irregular in the *Present Indicative*, in the *Future*, the *Conditional*, and the *Subjunctive Present*; as,

ALLER, to go.

<i>Pres. part.</i>	<i>Allant,</i>	going.
<i>Part. past,</i>	<i>Allé,</i>	gone.
<i>Past Infin.</i>	<i>Être allé,</i>	to have gone.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

<i>Je vais,</i>	I go.
<i>tu vas,</i>	thou goest.
<i>il va,</i>	he goes.
<i>nous allons,</i>	we go.
<i>vous allez,</i>	you go.
<i>ils vont,</i>	they go.

Imperfect.

<i>J'allais,</i>	I was going.
<i>tu allais,</i>	thou wert going.
<i>il allait,</i>	he was going.
<i>nous allions,</i>	we were going.
<i>vous alliez,</i>	you were going.
<i>ils allaient,</i>	they were going.

Preterite Definite.

<i>J'allai,</i>	I went.
<i>tu allas,</i>	thou wentest.
<i>il alla,</i>	he went.
<i>nous allâmes,</i>	we went.
<i>vous allâtes,</i>	you went.
<i>ils allèrent,</i>	they went.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>Je suis allé,</i>	I went.
<i>tu es allé,</i>	thou wentest.
<i>il est allé,</i>	he went.
<i>nous sommes allés,</i>	we went.
<i>vous êtes allés,</i>	you went.
<i>ils sont allés,</i>	they went.

Future.

*J'irai,
tu iras,
il ira,
nous irons,
vous irez,
ils iront,*

I shall go.
thou shalt go.
he shall go.
we shall go.
you shall go.
they shall go.

Conditional.

*J'irais,
tu irais,
il irait,
nous irions,
vous iriez,
ils iraient,*

I would go.
thou wouldst go.
he would go.
we would go.
you would go.
they would go.

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

*Que j'aie,
que tu aies,
qu'il aie,
que nous allions,
que vous alliez,
qu'ils aillent,*

that I may go.
that thou mayest go.
that he may go.
that we may go.
that you may go.
that they may go.

Imperfect.

*Que je allasse,
que tu allasses,
qu'il allât,
que nous allassions,
que vous allassiez,
qu'ils allassent,*

that I might go.
that thou mightest go.
that he might go.
that we might go.
that you might go.
that they might go.

IMPERATIVE.

*Va,
qu'il aille,
allons,
allez,
qu'ils aillent,*

go.
let him go.
let us go.
go.
let them go.

XCVIII. ENVOYER, to send ; and RENVOYER,
to send away, or back.

Irregular in the *Future* and *Conditional*. The rest of the Verb follows the regular rules of formation, with the orthographical differences of the Verbs in *yer*.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Envoyer,</i>	to send.
<i>Pres. part.</i>	<i>Envoyant,</i>	sending.
<i>Part. past,</i>	<i>Envoyé,</i>	sent.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.

<i>J'envoie,</i>	I send.
<i>tu envoies,</i>	thou sendest,
<i>il envoie,</i>	he sends.
<i>nous envoyons,</i>	we send.
<i>vous envoyez,</i>	you send.
<i>ils envoient,</i>	they send.

Imperfect.

<i>J'envoyais,</i>	I was sending.
<i>tu envoyais,</i>	thou wert sending.
<i>il envoyait,</i>	he was sending.
<i>nous envoyions,</i>	we were sending.
<i>vous envoyiez,</i>	you were sending.
<i>ils envoyaient,</i>	they were sending.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>J'ai envoyé,</i>	I have sent.
<i>tu as envoyé,</i>	thou hast sent.
<i>il a envoyé,</i>	he has sent.
<i>nous avons envoyé,</i>	we have sent.
<i>vous avez envoyé,</i>	you have sent.
<i>ils ont envoyé,</i>	they have sent.

Preterite Definite.

<i>J'envoyai,</i>	I sent.
<i>tu envoyas,</i>	thou sentest.
<i>il envoya,</i>	he sent.
<i>nous envoyâmes,</i>	we sent.
<i>vous envoyâtes,</i>	you sent.
<i>ils envoyèrent,</i>	they sent.

Future.

*J'enterrai,
tu enterras,
il enverra,
nous enverrons,
vous enverrez,
ils enverront,*

I shall send.
thou shalt send.
he shall send.
we shall send.
you shall send.
they shall send.

Conditional.

*J'enverrais,
tu enverrais,
il enverrait,
nous enverrions,
vous enverriez,
ils enverraient,*

I would send.
thou wouldst send.
he would send.
we would send.
you would send.
they would send.

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

*Que je envoie,
que tu envoies,
qu'il envoie,
que nous envoyions,
que vous envoyiez,
qu'ils envoient,*

that I may send.
that thou mayest send.
that he may send.
that we may send.
that you may send.
that they may send.

IMPERATIVE.

*Envoie,
qu'il envoie,
envoyons,
envoyez,
qu'ils envoient,*

send.
let him send.
let us send.
send.
let them send.

IR.**XCIX. Verbs in IR, ISSANT, I.***Regular.*

<i>Finir^b,</i>	to finish.
<i>Finissant,^a</i>	finishing.
<i>Fini,</i>	finished.

- ^{a b} The parts of the Verb formed from the participle present will be marked with an (^a) ; those formed from the Infinitive, with a (^b). Wherever this formation does not take place, the Verb may be considered irregular.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Je finis,
tu finis,
il finit,
nous finissons,^a
vous finissez,^a
ils finissent,^a } I finish, &c.

Imperfect.

Je finissais,^a
tu finissais,^a
il finissait,^a
nous finissions,^a
vous finissiez,^a
ils finissaient,^a } I was finishing, &c.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>J'ai fini,</i>	I have finished.
<i>tu as fini,</i>	thou hast finished.
<i>il a fini,</i>	he has finished.
<i>nous avons fini,</i>	we have finished.
<i>vous avez fini,</i>	you have finished.
<i>ils ont fini,</i>	they have finished.

Perfect.

Je finis,
tu finis,
il finit,
nous finîmes,
vous finîtes,
ils finirent, } I finished, &c.

Future.

Je finirai,^b
tu finiras,^b
il finira,^b
nous finirons,^b
vous finirez,^b
ils finiront,^b } I will finish, &c.

Conditional.

Je finirais,^b
tu finirais,^b
il finirait,^b
nous finirions,^b
vous finiriez,^b
ils finiraient,^b } I could finish, &c.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Que je finisse,^a
que tu finisses,^a
qu'il finisse,^a
que nous finissions,^a
que vous finissiez,^a
qu'ils finissent,^a } That I finish, &c.

Imperfect.

Que je finisse,
que tu finisses,
qu'il finît,
que nous finissions,
que vous finissiez,
qu'ils finissent. } That I might finish, &c.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Finis,</i>	finish.
<i>qu'il finisse,^a</i>	let him finish.
<i>finissons,^a</i>	let us finish.
<i>finissez,^a</i>	finish.
<i>qu'ils finissent,^a</i>	let him finish.

The *preterpluperfect* of any Verb is composed of *imperfect* of the auxiliary and the *participle past* : th
j'avais fini, I had finished.

In the like manner conjugate—*Agir, abolir, assourc
bâtir, bénir, bannir, hondir, convertir, franchir, grana
gémir, gravir, grossir, haïr, hennir, languir, maigrir, mun
mûrir, nourrir, noircir, obéir, périr, pâlir, rôtir, ravir, réun
réussir, saisir, tarir, trahir, unir.*

Verbs in IR, ANT, I.

Regular.

<i>Sentir,^b</i>	to feel.
<i>Sentant,^a</i>	feeling.
<i>Senti,</i>	felt.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

*Je sens,
tu sens,
il sent,
nous sentons,^a
vous sentez,^a
ils sentent,^a*

}
I feel, &c.
}

Imperfect.

*Je sentais,^a
tu sentais,^a
il sentait,^a
nous sentions,^a
vous sentiez,^a
ils sentaient.^a*

}
I felt, &c.
}

Preterite Indefinite.

*J'ai senti,
tu as senti,
il a senti,
nous avons senti,
vous avez senti,
ils ont senti,*

I have felt, or I felt.
thou hast felt, or thou feltest.
he has felt, or he felt.
we have felt, or we felt.
you have felt, or you felt.
they have felt, or they felt.

Perfect.

*Je sentis,
tu sentis,
il sentit,
nous sentîmes,
vous sentîtes,
ils sentirent,*

}

I felt, &c.

Future.

*Je sentirai,^b
tu sentiras,^b
il sentira,^b
nous sentirons,^b
vous sentirez,^b
ils sentiront,^b*

}

I will feel, &c.

Conditional.

*Je sentirais,^b
tu sentirais,^b
il sentirait,^b
nous sentirions,^b
vous sentiriez,^b
ils sentiraient,^b*

}

I would feel, &c.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je sente,^a
que tu sentes,^a
qu'il sente,^a
que nous sentions,^a
que vous sentiez,^a
qu'ils sentent,^a*

}

That I feel, &c.

Imperfect.

*Que je sentisse,
que tu sentisses,
qu'il sentît,
que nous sentissions,
que vous sentissiez,
qu'ils sentissent,*

}

That I might feel, &c.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Sens, qu'il sente,^a sentons,^a sentez,^a qu'ils sentent,^a</i>	<i>feel. let him feel. let us feel. feel. let them feel.</i>
--	--

In the same way Conjugate

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Partir,</i>	to go away.
<i>Part. pres.</i>	<i>partant,</i>	going away.
<i>Part. past,</i>	<i>parti,</i>	gone.
<i>Infinitive part.</i>	<i>être parti,</i>	to have gone.
<i>Present infin.</i>	<i>je pars,</i>	I go.
<i>Perf. indefinite,</i>	<i>je suis parti,</i>	I went.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Sortir,</i>	to go out.
<i>Present part.</i>	<i>sortant,</i>	going out.
<i>Past part.</i>	<i>sorti,</i>	gone out.
<i>Inf. past,</i>	<i>être sorti,</i>	to have gone out.
<i>Present indic.</i>	<i>je sors,</i>	I go out.
<i>Pret. indefinite,</i>	<i>je suis sorti,</i>	I went out.
<i>Pret. definite,</i>	<i>je sortis.</i>	

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Servir,</i>	to serve.
<i>Present part.</i>	<i>servant,</i>	serving.
<i>Past part.</i>	<i>servi,</i>	served.
<i>Pres. indicative,</i>	<i>je sers,</i>	I serve.
<i>Pret. indefinite,</i>	<i>j'ai servi,</i>	I have served.
<i>Pret. definite,</i>	<i>je servis,</i>	I served.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Dormir,</i>	to sleep.
<i>Present part.</i>	<i>dormant,</i>	sleeping.
<i>Past part.</i>	<i>dormi,</i>	slept.
<i>Pres. indicative,</i>	<i>je dors,</i>	I sleep.
<i>Pret. indefinite,</i>	<i>j'ai dormi,</i>	I have slept.
<i>Pret. definite,</i>	<i>je dormis,</i>	I slept.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Mentir,</i>	to tell lies.
<i>Present part.</i>	<i>mentant,</i>	lying.
<i>Past part.</i>	<i>menti,</i>	lied.
<i>Pres. indicative,</i>	<i>je mens,</i>	I lie.
<i>Pret. indefinite,</i>	<i>j'ai menti,</i>	I have lied.
<i>Pret. definite,</i>	<i>je mentis,</i>	I lied.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Se repentir,</i>	to repent.
<i>Present part.</i>	<i>se repentant,</i>	repenting.
<i>Past part.</i>	<i>repenti,</i>	repented.
<i>Past infinitive,</i>	<i>s'être repenti,</i>	to have repented.
<i>Pres. indicative,</i>	<i>je me repens,</i>	I repent.
<i>Pret. indefinite,</i>	<i>je me suis repenti,</i>	I have repented.
<i>Pret. definite,</i>	<i>je me repentis,</i>	I repented.

Verbs in ENIR, ENANT, ENU.

<i>Venir,</i>	to come.
<i>Venant,</i> ^a	coming.
<i>Venu,</i>	come.
<i>Être venu,</i>	to have come.

INDICATIVE.

<i>Present.</i>		<i>Imperfect.</i>	
<i>Je viens,</i>	} I came, &c.	<i>Je venais,</i> ^a	} I came, used to come, was coming, &c.
<i>tu viens,</i>		<i>tu venais,</i> ^a	
<i>il vient,</i>		<i>il venait,</i> ^a	
<i>nous venons,</i> ^a		<i>nous venions,</i> ^a	
<i>vous venez,</i> ^a		<i>vous veniez,</i> ^a	
<i>ils viennent,</i>		<i>ils venaient,</i>	

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>Je suis venu,</i>	I came.
<i>tu es venu,</i>	thou camest.
<i>il est venu,</i>	he, it came.
<i>elle est venue,</i>	she, it came.
<i>nous sommes venus,</i>	we came.
<i>vous êtes</i> { <i>venus</i> or <i>venu,</i> <i>venues</i> or <i>venue,</i> }	you came.
<i>ils sont venus,</i>	they came.

<i>Perfect.</i>		<i>Future.</i>	
<i>Je vins,</i>	} I came, &c.	<i>Je viendrai,</i>	} I will come, &c.
<i>tu vins,</i>		<i>tu viendras,</i>	
<i>il vint,</i>		<i>il viendra,</i>	
<i>nous vîmes,</i>		<i>nous viendrons,</i>	
<i>vous vîtes,</i>		<i>vous viendrez,</i>	
<i>ils vinrent,</i>		<i>ils viendront,</i>	

Conditional.

<i>Je viendrais,</i>	} I would come, &c.
<i>tu viendrais,</i>	
<i>il viendrait,</i>	
<i>nous viendrions,</i>	
<i>vous viendriez,</i>	
<i>ils viendraient,</i>	

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je vienne,
que tu viennes,
qu'il vienne,
que nous venions,^a
que vous veniez,^a
qu'ils viennent,*

} That I come,
&c.

Imperfect.

*Que je vinsse,
que tu vinsses,
qu'il vînt,
que nous vinssions,
que vous vinssiez,
qu'ils vinssent,*

} That I might
come, &c.

IMPERATIVE.

*Viens,
qu'il vienne,
venons,^a
venez,^a
qu'ils viennent,*

come.
let him come.
let us come.
come.
let them come.

In the same way conjugate—*Tenir*, to hold ; *tenant*, *tenu*, avoir *tenu*. *Se souvenir*, to remember ; *se souvenant*, *souvenu*, *je me souviens*, *s'être souvenu*.

CUEILLIR, to gather.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Cueillir,</i>	to gather.
<i>Pres. part.</i>	<i>Cueillant,^a</i>	gathering.
<i>Past part.</i>	<i>Cueilli,</i>	gathered.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir cueilli,</i>	to have gathered.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

*Je cueille,
tu cueilles,
il cueille,
nous cueillons,^a
vous cueillez,^a
ils cueillent,^a*

I gather.
thou gatherest.
he gathers.
we gather.
you gather.
they gather.

Imperfect.

*Je cueillais,^a
tu cueillais,^a
il cueillait,^a
nous cueillions,^a
vous cueilliez,^a
ils cueillaient,^a*

I was gathering.
thou wast gathering.
he was gathering.
we were gathering.
you were gathering.
they were gathering.

Preterite Indefinite.

cueilli,	I have gathered.
cueilli,	thou hast gathered.
cueilli,	he has gathered.
vous cueilli,	we have gathered.
avez cueilli,	you have gathered.
cueilli,	they have gathered.

Preterite Definite.

cueillis,	I gathered.
cueillis,	thou gatheredst.
cueilli,	he gathered.
cueillimes,	we gathered.
cueillîtes,	you gathered.
cueillirent,	they gathered.

Future.

cueillerai,	I will	} gather.
cueilleras,	thou wilt	
cueillera,	he will	
cueillerons,	we will	
cueillerez,	you will	
cueilleront,	they will	

Conditional.

cueillerais,	I would	} gather.
cueillerais,	thou would'st	
cueillirait,	he would	
cueillirions,	we would	
cueilliriez,	you would	
cueilliraient,	they would	

SUBJUNCTIVE.

cueille, ^a	that I may	} gather.
cueilles, ^a	thou thou mayest	
cueille, ^a	that he may	
vous cueillions, ^a	that we may	
cueilliez, ^a	that you may	
cueillent, ^a	that they may	

<i>Que je cueillisse,</i>	that I might	} gather.
<i>que tu cueillisses,</i>	that thou mightest	
<i>qu'il cueillît,</i>	that he might	
<i>que nous cueillissions,</i>	that we might	
<i>que vous cueillissiez,</i>	that you might	
<i>qu'ils cueillissent,</i>	that they might	

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Cueille,</i>	gather.
<i>qu'il cueile,^a</i>	let him gather.
<i>cueillons,^a</i>	let us gather.
<i>cueillez,^a</i>	gather.
<i>qu'ils cueillent,^a</i>	let them gather.

So conjugate *accueillir*, to welcome; *recueillir*, to collect.

COURIR AND COMPOUNDS.

<i>Courir,</i>	to run.
<i>Courant,^a</i>	running.
<i>Couru,</i>	run.

INDICATIVE.

<i>Present.</i>		<i>Imperfect.</i>	
<i>Je cours,</i> <i>tu cours,</i> <i>il court,</i> <i>nous courons,^a</i> <i>vous courez,^a</i> <i>ils courent,</i>	} I run, &c.	<i>Je courais,^a</i> <i>tu courais,^a</i> <i>il courait,^a</i> <i>nous courions,^a</i> <i>vous couriez,^a</i> <i>ils couraient,^a</i>	} I ran, or was running, &c.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>J'ai couru,</i>	I ran.
<i>tu as couru,</i>	thou rannest.
<i>il a couru,</i>	he ran.
<i>nous avons couru,</i>	we ran.
<i>vous avez couru,</i>	you ran.
<i>ils ont couru,</i>	they ran.

Perfect.

Je courus,
tu courus,
il courut,
nous courûmes,
vous courûtes,
ils coururent,

} I ran, &c.

Future.

Je courrai,
tu courras,
il courra,
nous courrons,
vous courrez,
ils courront,

} I will run, &c.

Conditional.

Je courrais,
tu courrais,
il courrait,
nous courrions,
vous courriez,
ils courraient,

} I would run, &c.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Que je coure,^a
que tu courres,^a
qu'il coure,^a
que nous courions,^a
que vous couriez,^a
qu'ils courent,^a

} That I run, &c.

Imperfect.

Que je courusse,
que tu courusses,
qu'il courût,
que nous courussions,
que vous courussiez,
qu'il courussent,

} That I might run, &c.

IMPERATIVE.

Cours,
qu'il coure,^a
courons,^a
courez,^a
qu'ils courent,^a

run.
let him run.
let us run.
run.
let them run.

Verbs in IR, ANT, ERT.

Offrir,^b to offer.
Offrant,^a offering.
Offert, offered.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

J'offre,
tu offres,
il offre,
nous offrons,^a
vous offrez,^a
ils offrent,^a

}
 I offer, &c.

Imperfect.

J'offrais,^a
tu offrais,^a
il offrait,^a
nous offrions,^a
vous offriez,^a
ils offraient,^a

}
 I offered, &c.

Preterite Indefinite.

J'ai offert,
tu as offert,
il a offert,
nous avons offert,
vous avez offert,
ils ont offert,

I offered.
 thou offeredst.
 he offered.
 we offered.
 you offered.
 they offered.

Perfect.

J'offris,
tu offris,
il offrit,
nous offrîmes,
vous offrîtes,
ils offrirent,

}
 I offered, &c.

Future.

J'offrirai,^b
tu offriras,^b
il offrira,^b
nous offrirons,^b
vous offrirez,^b
ils offriront,^b

}
 I will offer,
 &c.

Conditional.

J'offrirais,^b
tu offrirais,^b
il offrirait,^b
nous offririons,^b
vous offririez,^b
ils offriraient,^b

}
 I would offer, &c.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Que j'offre,^a
que tu offres,^a
qu'il offre,^a
que nous offrions,^a
que vous offriez,^a
qu'ils offrent,^a

}
 That I offer,
 &c.

Imperfect.

Que j'offrisse,
que tu offrisses,
qu'il offrît,
que nous offrissions,
que vous offrissez,
qu'ils offrisseient,

}
 That I might,
 &c.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Offre,</i>	offer.
<i>qu'il offre,^a</i>	let him offer.
<i>offrons,^a</i>	let us offer.
<i>offrez,^a</i>	offer.
<i>qu'ils offrent,^a</i>	let them offer.

Conjugate in the same way—*Souffrir, souffrant, souffert; courrir, couvrant, couvert; ouvrir, ouvrant, ouvert*; and their compounds.

MOURIR, to die.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Mourir,</i>	to die.
<i>Part. pres.</i>	<i>Mourant,^a</i>	dying.
<i>Past part.</i>	<i>Mort,</i>	dead.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Être mort,</i>	to have died.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>Je meurs,</i>	I die, or am dying.
<i>tu meurs,</i>	thou diest.
<i>il meurt,</i>	he dies.
<i>nous mourons,^a</i>	we die.
<i>vous mourez,^a</i>	you die.
<i>ils meurent,</i>	they die.

Imperfect.

<i>Je mourais,^a</i>	I was dying.
<i>tu mourais,^a</i>	thou wert dying.
<i>il mourait,^a</i>	he was dying.
<i>nous mourions,^a</i>	we were dying.
<i>vous mouriez,^a</i>	you were dying.
<i>ils mouraient,^a</i>	they were dying.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>Je suis mort,</i>	I am dead, or I died.
<i>tu es mort,</i>	thou art dead.
<i>il est mort,</i>	he is dead, or he died.
<i>nous sommes morts,</i>	we are dead.
<i>vous êtes morts,</i>	you are dead.
<i>ils sont morts,</i>	they are dead, or they died.

Præterite Definite.

*Je mourus,
tu mourus,
il mourut,
nous mourûmes,
vous mourûtes,
ils moururent,*

I died.
thou diedst.
he died.
we died.
you died.
they died.

Future.

*Je mourrai,
tu mourras,
il mourra.
nous mourrons,
vous mourrez,
ils mourront,*

I shall die.
thou shalt die.
he shall, or will die.
we shall die.
you shall, or will die.
they shall, or will die.

Conditional.

*Je mourrais,
tu mourrais,
il mourrait,
nous mourrions,
vous mourriez,
ils mourraient,*

I would, or should die.
thou would'st die.
he would die.
we would, or should die.
you would die.
they would die.

SUBJUNCTIVE.*Present.*

*Que je meure,
que tu meures,
qu'il meure,
que nous mourions,^a
que vous mouriez,^a
qu'ils meurent,*

that I die.
that thou diest.
that he die.
that we die.
that you die.
that they die.

Imperfect.

*Que je mourusse,
que tu mourusses,
qu'il mourût,
que nous mourussions,
que vous mourussiez,
qu'ils mourussent,*

that I might die.
that thou mightest die.
that he might die.
that we might die.
that you might die.
that they might die.

IMPERATIVE.

Meurs,
qu'il meure,
mourons,^a
mourez,^a
qu'ils meurent,

die.
let him die.
let us die.
die.
let them die.

OIR.

Verbs in EVOIR.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Recevoir,</i>	to receive.
<i>Pres. part.</i>	<i>Recevant,^a</i>	receiving.
<i>Part. past,</i>	<i>Reçu,</i>	received.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir reçu,</i>	to have received.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Je reçois,
tu reçois,
il reçoit,
nous recevons,^a
vous recevez,^a
ils reçoivent,

} I receive, &c.

Imperfect.

Je recevais,^a
tu recevais,^a
il recevait,^a
nous recevions,^a
vous receviez,^a
ils recevaient,^a

} I was receiving, or used to receive, &c.

Preterite Definite.

Je reçus,
tu reçus,
il reçut,
nous reçûmes,
vous reçûtes,
ils reçurent,

} I received, &c.

Preterite Indefinite.

J'ai reçu,
tu as reçu,
il a reçu,
nous avons reçu,
vous avez reçu,
ils ont reçu,

} I have received, or I received, &c.

Future.

Je recevrai,
tu recevras,
il recevra,
nous recevrons,
vous recevrez,
ils recevront,

} I shall or will receive, &c.

Conditional.

Je recevrais,
tu recevrais,
il recevrait,
nous recevriions,
vous recevriez,
ils recevraient,

} I would receive, &c.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je reçoive,
que tu reçoives,
qu'il reçoive,
que nous recevions,^a
que vous receviez,^a
qu'ils reçoivent,*

} That I may re-
ceive, &c.

Imperfect.

*Que je reçusse,
que tu reçusses,
qu'il reçût,
que nous reçussions,
que vous reçussiez,
qu'ils reçussent,*

} That I might
receive, &c.

IMPERATIVE.

*Reçois,
qu'il reçoive,
recevons,
recevez,
qu'ils reçoivent,*

receive.
let him receive.
let us receive.
receive.
let them receive.

In the same way conjugate—*Devoir, devant, dû, je dois, je dus, j'ai dû*, to owe; *apercevoir, apercevant, aperçu, j'aperçois, j'aperçu, j'ai aperçus*, to perceive; *concevoir*, to conceive; *décevoir*, to deceive; *percevoir*, to collect, or levy money.

Devoir, to owe, *devant, dû, je dois, je devais, je dus, je devais, j'ai dû*, is in French a sort of Auxiliary :

Devoir, to be to...., to have to.....

Je dois, I am to...., I have to...., I must....

Je devais, I was to...., I had to.....

Je dus, I had to...., I was to.....

J'ai dû, I had to...., I was obliged to.....

Je devrais, I should...., I ought to.....

J'aurais dû, I ought to have...., I should have.....

The Verb ASSEOIR, to seat ; conjugated pronominally, to sit.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>S'asseoir,</i>	to sit.
<i>Pres. part.</i>	<i>S'asseyant,^a</i>	sitting.
<i>Past part.</i>	<i>Assis,</i>	seated, or sitting.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>S'élant assis,</i>	having sat.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>Je m'assieds,</i>	I sit.
<i>tu t'assieds,</i>	thou sittest.
<i>il s'assied,</i>	he sits.
<i>nous nous asseyons,^a</i>	we sit.
<i>vous vous asseyez,^a</i>	you sit.
<i>ils s'assèyent,</i>	they sit.

Imperfect.

<i>Je m'asseyais,^a</i>	I was in the act of sitting down:
<i>tu t'asseyais,^a</i>	thou wert, &c.
<i>il s'asseyait,^a</i>	he was, &c.
<i>nous nous asseyions,^a</i>	we were, &c.
<i>vous vous asseyiez,^a</i>	you were, &c.
<i>ils s'asseyaient,^a</i>	they were, &c.

Preterite Definite.

<i>Je m'assis,</i>	I sat.
<i>tu l'assis,</i>	thou sattest.
<i>il s'assit,</i>	he sat.
<i>nous nous assîmes,</i>	we sat.
<i>vous vous assîtes,</i>	you sat.
<i>ils s'assirent,</i>	they sat.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>Je me suis assis,</i>	I sat.
<i>tu t'es assis,</i>	thou sattest.
<i>il s'est assis,</i>	he sat.
<i>nous nous sommes assis,</i>	we sat.
<i>vous vous êtes assis,</i>	you sat.
<i>ils se sont assis,</i>	they sat.

Preterpluperfect.

*Je m'étais assis,
tu t'étais assis,
il s'était assis,
nous nous étions assis,
vous vous étiez assis,
ils s'étaient assis,*

I had sat down.
thou hadst, &c.
he had, &c.
we had, &c.
you had, &c.
they had, &c.

Future.

*Je m'assiérai,
tu t'assiéras,
il s'assiéra,
nous nous assiérons,
vous vous assiérez,
ils s'assiéront,*

I shall
thou shalt
he shall
we shall
you shall
they shall

} sit down.

Conditional.

*Je m'assiérais,
tu t'assiérais,
il s'assiérait,
nous nous assiérions,
vous vous assiériez,
ils s'assiéraient,*

I would
thou would'st
he would
we would
you would
they would

} sit down.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

*Que je m'assède,^a
que tu t'assèdes,^a
qu'il s'assède,^a
que nous nous assédions,^a
que vous vous assédiez,^a
qu'ils s'assèdent,^a*

that I may
that thou mayest
that he may
that we may
that you may
that they may

} sit down.

*Que je m'assisse,
que tu t'assisses,
qu'il s'assît,
que nous nous assissions,
que vous vous assissiez,
qu'ils s'assissent,*

that I might
that thou mightest
that he might
that we might
that you might
that they might

} sit down.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Assieds-toi,</i>	sit down.
<i>qu'il s'assède,</i>	let him sit down.
<i>asseyons-nous,</i>	let us sit down.
<i>asseyez-vous,</i>	sit down.
<i>qu'ils s'assèyent,</i>	let them sit down.

The Verb VALOIR, to be worth.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Valoir,</i>	to be worth.
<i>Part. pres.</i>	<i>Valant,^a</i>	being worth.
<i>Part. past,</i>	<i>Valu,</i>	been worth.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir valu,</i>	to have been worth.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>Je vauz,</i>	I am worth.
<i>tu vauz,</i>	thou art worth.
<i>il vaut,</i>	he, it is worth.
<i>nous valons,^a</i>	we are worth.
<i>vous valez,^a</i>	you are worth.
<i>ils valent,^a</i>	they are worth.

Imperfect.

<i>Je valais,^a</i>	I was worth.
<i>tu valais,^a</i>	thou wert worth.
<i>il valait,^a</i>	he was worth.
<i>nous valions,^a</i>	we were worth.
<i>vous valiez,^a</i>	you were worth.
<i>ils valaient,^a</i>	they were worth.

Preterite Definite.

<i>Je valus,</i>	I was worth.
<i>tu valus,</i>	thou wert worth.
<i>il valut,</i>	he was worth.
<i>nous valûmes,</i>	we were worth.
<i>vous valûtes,</i>	you were worth.
<i>ils valurent,</i>	they were worth.

Preterite Indefinite.

*J'ai valu,
tu as valu,
il a valu,
nous avons valu,
vous avez valu,
ils ont valu,*

I have been worth.
thou hast, &c.
he has, &c.
we have, &c.
you have, &c.
they have, &c.

Future.

*Je vaudrai,
tu vaudras,
il vaudra,
nous vaudrons,
vous vaudrez,
ils vaudront,*

I shall be worth.
thou shalt be worth.
he, it will be worth.
we will be worth.
you will be worth.
they will be worth.

Conditional.

*Je vaudrais,
tu vaudrais,
il vaudrait,
nous vaudrions,
vous vaudriez,
ils vaudraient,*

I would be worth.
thou would'st be worth.
he, it would be worth.
we would be worth.
you would be worth.
they would be worth.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je vaille,
que tu vailles,
qu'il vaille,
que nous valions,^a
que vous valiez,^a
qu'ils valient,*

that I may
that thou mayest
that he may
that we may
that you may
that they may

} be worth.

Imperfect.

*Que je valusse,
que tu valusses,
qu'il valût,
que nous valussions,
que vous valussiez,
qu'ils valussent,*

that I might
that thou mightest
that he might
that we might
that you might
that they might

} be worth.

IMPERATIVE.

Vaux,
qu'il vaille,
valons,^a
valez,^a
qu'ils valent,

be worth.
let it, him be worth.
let us be worth.
be worth.
let them be worth.

Valoir mieux,
il vaut mieux,
en valoir la peine,
cela n'en vaut pas la peine,

to be better.
it is better.
to be worth while.
it is not worth while.

The Verb VOULOIR, to wish.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Vouloir,</i>	to wish, to want to, to wish for.
<i>Part. pres.</i>	<i>Voulant,^a</i>	wishing.
<i>Past part.</i>	<i>Voulu,</i>	wished.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir voulu,</i>	to have wished.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Je veux,
tu veux,
il veut,
nous voulons,^a
vous voulez,^a
ils veulent,

I wish.
thou wishest.
he wishes.
we wish.
you wish.
they wish.

Imperfect.

Je voulais,^a
tu voulais,^a
il voulait,^a
nous voulions,^a
vous vouliez,^a
ils voulaient,^a

I wanted.
thou wantedst.
he wanted.
we wanted.
you wanted.
they wanted.

Preterite Definite.

*Je voulus,
tu voulus,
il voulut,
nous voulûmes,
vous voulûtes,
ils voulurent,*

I wished.*
thou wishedst.
he wished.
we wished.
you wished.
they wished.

Preterite Indefinite.

*J'ai voulu,
tu as voulu,
il a voulu,
nous avons voulu,
vous avez voulu,
ils ont voulu,*

I have wished.
thou hast wished.
he has wished.
we have wished.
you have wished.
they have wished.

Future.

*Je voudrai,
tu voudras,
il voudra,
nous voudrons,
vous voudrez,
ils voudront,*

I shall want.
thou wilt want.
he will want.
we shall want.
you will want.
they will want.

Conditional.

*Je voudrais,
tu voudrais,
il voudrait,
nous voudrions,
vous voudriez,
ils voudraient,*

I should wish *or* like to.....
thou should'st, &c.
he would, &c.
we should, &c.
you would, &c.
they would, &c.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je veuille,
que tu veuilles,
qu'il veuille,
que nous voulions,^a
que vous vouliez,^a
qu'ils veuillent,*

that I may wish.
that thou may'st wish.
that he may wish.
that we may wish.
that you may wish.
that they may wish.

* The preterite *voulus* implies at the same time the wish and the execution.

Imperfect.

*Que je voulusse,
que tu voulusses,
qu'il voulût,
que nous voulussions,
que vous voulussiez,
qu'ils voulussent,*

that I might wish.
that thou mightest, &c.
that he might, &c.
that we might, &c.
that you might, &c.
that they might, &c.

IMPERATIVE.

Defective.

Veuille, } wish, be good enough.....
veuillez,

The Verb VOIR, to see.

Infin. Voir, to see.
Part. pres. Voyant, seeing.
Past part. Vu, seen.
| Past infin. Avoir vu, to have seen.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

*Je vois,
tu vois,
il voit,
nous voyons,^a
vous voyez,^a
ils voient,^a* } I see, &c.

Imperfect.

*Je voyais,^a
tu voyais,^a
il voyait,^a
nous voyions,^a
vous voyiez,^a
ils voyaient,^a* } I saw or used to see, &c.

Preterite Definite.

*Je vis,
tu vis,
il vit,
nous vîmes,
vous vîtes,
ils virent,* } I saw, &c.

Preterite Indefinite.

*J'ai vu,
tu as vu,
il a vu,
nous avons vu,
vous avez vu,
ils ont vu,* } I have seen or I saw, &c.

Future.

Je verrai,
tu verras,
il verra,
nous verrons,
vous verrez,
ils verront,

I shall see, &c.

Conditional.

Je verrais,
tu verrais,
il verrait,
nous verrions,
vous verriez,
ils verraient,

I should or would see, &c.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Que je voie,^a
que tu voies,^a
qu'il voie,^a
que nous voyions,^a
que vous voyiez,^a
qu'ils voient,^a

That I may see, &c.

Imperfect.

Que je visse,
que tu visses,
qu'il vît,
que nous vissions,
que vous vissiez,
qu'ils vissent,

That I might see, &c.

IMPERATIVE.

Vois,
qu'il voie,^a
voyons,^a
voyez,^a
qu'ils voient,^a

see.
 let him see.
 let us see.
 see.
 let them see.

So conjugate—*Revoir*, to see again; *Prévoir*, to foresee; *Entrevoir*, to have a glimpse of.

The Verb **POUVOIR**, to be able.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Pouvoir,</i>	to be able.
<i>Pres. part.</i>	<i>Pouvant,^a</i>	being able.
<i>Part. past,</i>	<i>Pu,</i>	been able.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir pu,</i>	to have been able.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Je peux or puis,
tu peux,
il peut,
nous pouvons,^a
vous pouvez,^a
ils peuvent,

I am able or can.
 thou canst, &c.
 he can, &c.
 we can, &c.
 you can, &c.
 they can, &c.

Imperfect.

*Je pouvais,^a
tu pouvais,^a
il pouvait,^a
nous pouvions,^a
vous pouviez,^a
ils pouvaient,^a*

*I was able or could.
thou couldst, &c.
he could, &c.
we could, &c.
you could, &c.
they could, &c.*

Preterite Definite.

*Je pus,
tu pus,
il put,
nous pûmes,
vous pûtes,
ils purent,*

*I was able.
thou wert able.
he was able.
we were able.
you were able.
they were able.*

Preterite Indefinite.

*J'ai pu,
tu as pu,
il a pu,
nous avons pu,
vous avez pu,
ils ont pu,*

*I have been able.
thou hast, &c.
he has, &c.
we have, &c.
you have, &c.
they have, &c.*

Future.

*Je pourrai,
tu pourras,
il pourra,
nous pourrons,
vous pourrez,
ils pourront,*

*I shall be able.
thou wilt be able.
he will be able.
we shall be able.
you will be able.
they will be able.*

Conditional.

*Je pourrais,
tu pourrais,
il pourrait,
nous pourrions,
vous pourriez,
ils pourraient,*

*I should, or I could be able.
thou would'st, or could'st, &c.
he would, or could, &c.
we should, &c.
you would, &c.
they would, &c.*

Past Conditional.

*J'aurais pu,
tu aurais pu,
il aurait pu,
nous aurions pu,
vous auriez pu,
ils auraient pu,*

I might have, or should have been
thou mightest have, &c. [able.
he might have, &c.
we might have, &c.
you might have, &c.
they might have, &c.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je puisse,
que tu puisses,
qu'il puisse,
que nous puissions,
que vous puissiez,
qu'ils puissent,*

that I may be able.
that thou may'st, &c.
that he may, &c.
that we may, &c.
that you may, &c.
that they may, &c.

Imperfect.

*Que je pusse,
que tu pusses,
qu'il pût,
que nous pussions,
que vous pussiez,
qu'ils pussent,*

that I might be able.
that thou mightest, &c.
that he might, &c.
that we might, &c.
that you might, &c.
that they might, &c.

IMPERATIVE. (*Exceptional.*)

*Puissé-je !
puisses-tu,
puisse-t-il,
puissions-nous,
puissiez-vous,
puissent-ils,*

may I !
may you.
may he.
may we.
may you.
may they.

POUVOIR, *to be able*, as an auxiliary, is followed by an Infinitive.

*Je pouvais
je ne pouvais pas,
tu pouvais,
il pouvait, &c.*

} *l'entendre*, I was able to, I could
I was not able, I could not
thou could'st, &c.
he could, &c.

} *hear him.*

<i>Je pourrais</i>	} <i>consentir,</i>	I should be able to, I might } <i>con-</i> I should not be able to, I } <i>sent.</i> thou could'st, &c. [could not. he might, &c.
<i>je ne pourrais pas</i>		
<i>tu pourrais,</i>		
<i>il pourrait,</i>		
<i>J'aurais pu</i>	} <i>partir,</i>	I should have been able to start, [or I might have started. I should not be able to, &c. thou mightest have started, he might have started.
<i>je n'aurais pas pu</i>		
<i>tu aurais pu,</i>		
<i>il aurait pu,</i>		

The Verb SAVOIR, to know.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Savoir,</i>	to know, to know how.
<i>Pres. part.</i>	<i>Sachant,</i> _a	knowing.
<i>Past part.</i>	<i>Su,</i>	known.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir su,</i>	to have known.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>Je sais,</i>	I know.
<i>tu sais,</i>	thou knowest.
<i>il sait,</i>	he knows.
<i>nous savons,</i>	we know.
<i>vous savez,</i>	you know.
<i>ils savent,</i>	they know.

Imperfect.

<i>Je savais,</i>	I knew.
<i>tu savais,</i>	thou knewest.
<i>il savait,</i>	he knew.
<i>nous savions,</i>	we knew.
<i>vous saviez,</i>	you knew.
<i>ils savaient,</i>	they knew.

Preterite Definite.

<i>Je sus,</i>	I knew.
<i>tu sus,</i>	thou knewest.
<i>il sut,</i>	he knew.
<i>nous sûmes,</i>	we knew.
<i>vous sûtes,</i>	you knew.
<i>ils surent,</i>	they knew.

Preterite Indefinite.

*J'ai su,
tu as su,
il a su,
nous avons su,
vous avez su,
ils ont su,*

I have known.
thou hast known.
he has known.
we have known.
you have known.
they have known.

Future.

*Je saurai,
tu sauras,
il saura,
nous saurons,
vous saurez,
ils sauront,*

I shall know.
thou shalt know.
he shall know.
we shall know.
you shall know.
they shall know.

Conditional.

Je saurais,
tu saurais,
il saurait,
nous saurions,
vous sauriez,
ils sauraient,*

I should know.
thou should'st know.
he should know.
we should know.
you should know.
they should know.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je sache,^a
que tu saches,^a
qu'il sache,^a
que nous sachions,^a
que vous sachiez,^a
qu'ils sachent,^a*

that I may
that thou mayest
that he may
that we may
that you may
that they may

} know.

Imperfect.

*Que je fusse,
que tu fusses,
qu'il eût,
que nous fussions,
que vous fussiez,
qu'ils fussent,*

that I might
that thou mightest
that he might
that we might
that you might
that they might

} know.

* *Saurais*, should know, is used in the sense of *pourrais*, could. *Je sus*, I knew how, or managed.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Sache,</i>	know.
<i>qu'il sache,</i> ^a	let him know.
<i>sachons,</i>	let us know.
<i>sachez,</i>	know.
<i>qu'ils sachent,</i> ^a	let them know.

The Verb **FALLOIR**, to be necessary ; a defective and impersonal Verb.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Falloir,</i>	to be necessary.
<i>Past part.</i>	<i>Fallu,</i>	been necessary.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir fallu,</i>	to have been necessary.

INDICATIVE.

<i>Present.</i>	<i>Imperfect.</i>
<i>Il faut,</i> it is necessary.	<i>Il fallait,</i> it was necessary.
<i>Preterite Definite.</i>	<i>Preterite Indefinite.</i>
<i>Il fallut,</i> it was necessary.	<i>Il a fallu,</i> it has been necessary.
<i>Future.</i>	<i>Conditional.</i>
<i>Il faudra,</i> it will be necessary.	<i>Il faudrait,</i> it would be necessary.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

<i>Present.</i>	<i>Imperfect.</i>
<i>Qu'il faille,</i> that it be necessary.	<i>Qu'il fallût,</i> that it might be necessary.

Falloir is followed by Verbs in the *infinitive* or *subjunctive*, or is used with personal pronouns ; thus,

<i>Il faut partir,</i>	You, I, or we must go.
<i>il faut qu'il parte,</i>	he must go.
<i>il me faut cela,</i>	I want that.
<i>il me le faut,</i>	I want it.
<i>il ne faut pas partir,</i>	we or you must not go.
<i>faut-il partir ?</i>	must we or I go.
<i>ne faut-il pas partir,</i>	must we or I not go.
<i>il ne faut pas qu'il parte,</i>	he must not go.
<i>faut-il qu'il parte ?</i>	must he go ?
<i>ne faut-il pas qu'il parte ?</i>	must he not go ?

Verbs in *RE*.

RENDRE and others.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Rendre,</i> ^b	to restore, render, return.
<i>Pres. part.</i>	<i>Rendant,</i> ^a	restoring.
<i>Past part.</i>	<i>Rendu,</i>	restored.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir rendu,</i>	to have rendered.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>Je rends,</i>	I restore.
<i>tu rends,</i>	thou restorest.
<i>il rend,</i>	he restores.
<i>nous rendons,</i> ^a	we restore.
<i>vous rendez,</i> ^a	you restore.
<i>ils rendent,</i> ^a	they restore.

Imperfect.

<i>Je rendais,</i> ^a	I was rendering.
<i>tu rendais,</i> ^a	thou wert rendering.
<i>il rendait,</i> ^a	he was rendering.
<i>nous rendions,</i> ^a	we were rendering.
<i>vous rendiez,</i> ^a	you were rendering.
<i>ils rendaient,</i> ^a	they were rendering.

Preterite Definite.

<i>Je rendis,</i>	I rendered.
<i>tu rendis,</i>	thou rendered'st.
<i>il rendit,</i>	he rendered.
<i>nous rendîmes,</i>	we rendered.
<i>vous rendîtes,</i>	you rendered.
<i>ils rendirent,</i>	they rendered.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>J'ai rendu,</i>	I have rendered.
<i>tu as rendu,</i>	thou hast rendered.
<i>il a rendu,</i>	he has rendered.
<i>nous avons rendu,</i>	we have rendered.
<i>vous avez rendu,</i>	you have rendered.
<i>ils ont rendu,</i>	they have rendered.

Future.

Je rendrai,^b
tu rendras,^b
il rendra,^b
nous rendrons,^b
vous rendrez,^b
ils rendront,^b

I shall restore.
 thou shalt restore.
 he shall restore.
 we shall restore.
 you shall restore.
 they shall restore.

Conditional.

Je rendrais,^b
tu rendrais,^b
il rendrait,^b
nous rendrions,^b
vous rendriez,^b
ils rendraient,^b

I would render.
 thou would'st render.
 he would render.
 we would render.
 you would render.
 they would render.

SUBJUNCTIVE.*Present.*

Que je rende,^a
que tu rendes,^a
qu'il rende,^a
que nous rendions,^a
que vous rendiez,^a
qu'ils rendent,^a

that I may
 that thou may'st
 that he may
 that we may
 that you may
 that they may

} render.

Imperfect.

Que je rendisse,
que tu rendisses,
qu'il rendît,
que nous rendissions,
que vous rendissiez,
qu'ils rendissent,

that I might
 that thou mightest
 that he might
 that we might
 that you might
 that they might

} render.

IMPERATIVE.

Rends,
qu'il rende,^a
rendons,^a
rendez,^a
qu'ils rendent,^a

restore.
 let him restore.
 let us restore.
 restore.
 let them restore.

In the same way Conjugate—

<i>Vendre</i> , to sell ;	<i>fondre</i> , to melt, to rush ;
<i>attendre</i> , to wait, to expect, to wait for ;	<i>correspondre</i> , to correspond ;
<i>défendre</i> , to defend, to forbid ;	<i>mordre</i> , <i>mordant</i> , <i>mordu</i> ; <i>je mords</i> , <i>je mordis</i> , to bite ;
<i>descendre</i> , to descend, go or come down ; <i>je suis ascendu</i> ;	<i>battre</i> , <i>battant</i> , <i>battu</i> , <i>je bats</i> , <i>je battis</i> , to beat ;
<i>se rendre</i> , to surrender, to repair to ;	<i>rompre</i> , <i>romprant</i> , <i>rompu</i> , <i>je romps</i> , <i>je rompis</i> , to break.
<i>répondre</i> , to answer ;	

Verbs like *Rendre*, conjugated reflectively or pronominally.

SE BATTRE, to fight.

<i>Infinitive</i> ,	<i>Se battre</i> ,	to fight.
<i>Part. pres.</i>	<i>Se battant</i> ,	fighting.
<i>Part. past</i> ,	<i>Battu</i> ,	fought,
<i>Past. infin.</i>	<i>S'être battu</i> ,	to have fought.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>Je me bats</i> ,	I fight.
<i>tu te bats</i> ,	thou fightest.
<i>il se bat</i> ,	he fights.
<i>nous nous battons</i> ,	we fight.
<i>vous vous battez</i> ,	you fight.
<i>ils se battent</i> ,	they fight.

Imperfect.

<i>Je me battais</i> ,	I was fighting.
<i>tu te battais</i> ,	thou wert fighting.
<i>il se battait</i> ,	he was fighting.
<i>nous nous battions</i> ,	we were fighting.
<i>vous vous battiez</i> ,	you were fighting.
<i>ils se battaient</i> ,	they were fighting.

Preterite Definite.

<i>je battis,</i>	I fought.
<i>battis,</i>	thou foughtest.
<i>battit,</i>	he fought.
<i>nous battîmes,</i>	we fought.
<i>vous battîtes,</i>	you fought.
<i>ils battirent,</i>	they fought.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>je suis battu,</i>	I have fought.
<i>es battu,</i>	thou hast fought.
<i>est battu,</i>	he has fought.
<i>nous sommes battus,</i>	we have fought.
<i>vous êtes battus,</i>	you have fought.
<i>sont battus,</i>	they have fought.

Preterpluperfect.

<i>j'étais battu,</i>	I had fought.
<i>étais battu,</i>	thou hadst fought.
<i>était battu,</i>	he had fought.
<i>nous étions battus,</i>	we had fought.
<i>vous étiez battus,</i>	you had fought.
<i>étaient battus,</i>	they had fought.

Future.

<i>je battrai,</i>	I shall	} fight.
<i>battras,</i>	thou shalt	
<i>battrà,</i>	he will	
<i>nous battrons,</i>	we will	
<i>vous battrez,</i>	you will	
<i>battront,</i>	they will	

Conditional.

<i>je battrais,</i>	I would	} fight.
<i>battrais,</i>	thou would'st	
<i>battrait,</i>	he would	
<i>nous battrions,</i>	we would	
<i>vous battriez,</i>	you would	
<i>battraient,</i>	they would	

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je me batte,
que tu te battes,
qu'il se batte,
que nous nous battions,
que vous vous battiez,
qu'ils se battent,*

that I may
that thou may'st
that he may
that we may
that you may
that they may

} fight.

Imperfect.

*Que je me battisse,
que tu te battisses,
qu'il se battît,
que nous nous battissions,
que vous vous battissiez,
qu'ils se battissent,*

that I might
that thou mightest
that he might
that we might
that you might
that they might

} fight.

IMPERATIVE.

*Bats-toi,
qu'il se batte,
battons-nous,
battiez-vous,
qu'ils se battent,*

fight.
let him fight.
let us fight.
fight.
let them fight.

PRENDRE AND COMPOUNDS.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Prendre,^b</i>	to take.
<i>Part. pres.</i>	<i>Prenant,^a</i>	taking.
<i>Part. past,</i>	<i>Pris,</i>	taken.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir pris,</i>	to have taken.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

*Je prends,
tu prends,
il prend,
nous prenons,^a
vous prenez,^a
ils prennent,*

I take.
thou takest.
he takes.
we take.
you take.
they take.

Imperfect.

<i>Je prenais,</i> ^a	I took.
<i>tu prenais,</i> ^a	thou tookest.
<i>il prenait,</i> ^a	he took.
<i>nous prenions,</i> ^a	we took.
<i>vous preniez,</i> ^a	you took.
<i>ils prenaient,</i> ^a	they took.

Preterite Definite.

<i>Je pris,</i>	I took.
<i>tu pris,</i>	thou tookest.
<i>il prit,</i>	he took.
<i>nous prîmes,</i>	we took.
<i>vous prîtes,</i>	you took.
<i>ils prirent,</i>	they took.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>J'ai pris,</i>	I have taken.
<i>tu as pris,</i>	thou hast taken.
<i>il a pris,</i>	he has taken.
<i>nous avons pris,</i>	we have taken.
<i>vous avez pris,</i>	you have taken.
<i>ils ont pris,</i>	they have taken.

Future.

<i>Je prendrai,</i> ^b	I shall	} take.
<i>tu prendras,</i> ^b	thou shalt	
<i>il prendra,</i> ^b	he shall	
<i>nous prendrons,</i> ^b	we shall	
<i>vous prendrez,</i> ^b	you shall	
<i>ils prendront,</i> ^b	they shall	

Conditional.

<i>Je prendrais,</i> ^b	I would	} take.
<i>tu prendrais,</i> ^b	thou wouldst	
<i>il prendrait,</i> ^b	he would	
<i>nous prendrions,</i> ^b	we would	
<i>vous prendriez,</i> ^b	you would	
<i>ils prendraient,</i> ^b	they would	

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je prenne,
que tu prennes,
qu'il prenne,
que nous prenions,^a
que vous preniez,^a
qu'ils prennent,*

that I may
that thou mayst
that he may
that we may
that you may
that they may

} take.

Imperfect.

*Que je prisse,
que tu prisses,
qu'il prît,
que nous prissions,
que vous prissiez,
qu'ils prissent,*

that I might
that thou mightest
that he might
that we might
that you might
that they might

} take.

IMPERATIVE.

*Prends,
qu'il prenne,
prenons,^a
prenez,^a
qu'ils prennent,*

take.
let him take.
let us take.
take.
let them take.

So *Apprendre*, to learn; *Comprendre*, to understand; *Surprendre*, to surprise; *Entreprendre*, to undertake; *Se prendre*, to set about, to go to work.

The Verb METTRE AND COMPOUNDS.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Mettre,^b</i>	to put.
<i>Part. pres.</i>	<i>Mettant,^a</i>	putting.
<i>Past part.</i>	<i>Mis,</i>	put.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir mis,</i>	to have put.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Je mets,
tu mets,
il met,
nous mettons,^a
vous mettez,^a
ils mettent,^a

I put.
thou puttest.
he puts.
we put.
you put.
they put.

Imperfect.

Je mettais,^a
tu mettais,^a
il mettait,^a
nous mettions,^a
vous mettiez,^a
ils mettaient,^a

I used to put.
thou usedst to put.
he used to put.
we used to put.
you used to put.
they used to put.

Preterite Definite.

Je mis,
tu mis,
il mit,
nous mîmes,
vous mîtes,
ils mirent,

I put.
thou puttedst.
he put.
we put.
you put.
they put.

Preterite Indefinite.

J'ai mis,
tu as mis,
il a mis,
nous avons mis,
vous avez mis,
ils ont mis,

I have put.
thou hast put.
he has put.
we have put.
you have put.
they have put.

Future.

Je mettrai,^b
tu mettras,^b
il mettra,^b
nous mettrons,^b
vous mettrez,^b
ils mettront,^b

I shall put.
thou shalt put.
he shall put.
we shall put.
you shall put.
they shall put.

Conditional.

*Je mettrais,^b
tu mettrais,^b
il mettrait,^b
nous mettrions,^b
vous mettriez,^b
ils mettraient,^b*

I would put.
thou wouldst put.
he would put.
we would put.
you would put.
they would put.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je mette,^a
que tu mettes,^a
qu'il mette,^a
que nous mettions,^a
que vous mettiez,^a
qu'ils mettent,^a*

that I may
that thou may'st
that he may
that we may
that you may
that they may

} put.

Imperfect.

*Que je misse,
que tu misses,
qu'il mît,
que nous missions,
que vous missiez,
qu'ils missent,*

that I might
that thou mightest
that he might
that we might
that you might
that they might

} put.

IMPERATIVE.

*Mets,
qu'il mette,^a
mettons,^a
mettez,^a
qu'ils mettent,^a*

put.
let him put.
let us put.
put.
let them put.

In the same way conjugate—*Admettre, promettre, remettre, soumettre, compromettre, se mettre*, to set about—to begin—to dress.

Verbs in AINDRE, EINDRE, OINDRE.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Craindre,^b</i>	to fear.
<i>Pres. part.</i>	<i>Craignant,^a</i>	fearing.
<i>Past part.</i>	<i>Craint,</i>	feared.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Je crains,
tu crains,
il craint,
nous craignons,^a
vous craignez,^a
ils craignent,^a

I fear.
 thou fearest.
 he fears.
 we fear.
 you fear.
 they fear.

Imperfect.

Je craignais,^a
tu craignais,^a
il craignait,^a
nous craignions,^a
vous craigniez,^a
ils craignaient,^a

I feared.
 thou fearedst.
 he feared.
 we feared.
 you feared.
 they feared.

Preterite Definite.

Je craignis,
tu craignis,
il craignit,
nous craignîmes,
vous craignîtes,
ils craignirent,

I feared.
 thou fearedst.
 he feared.
 we feared.
 you feared.
 they feared.

Preterite Indefinite.

J'ai craint,
tu as craint,
il a craint,
nous avons craint,
vous avez craint,
ils ont craint,

I have feared.
 thou hast feared.
 he has feared.
 we have feared.
 you have feared.
 they have feared.

Future.

Je craindrai,^b
tu craindras,^b
il craindra,^b
nous craindrons,^b
vous craindrez,^b
ils craindront,^b

I shall fear.
 thou shalt fear.
 he shall fear.
 we shall fear.
 you shall fear.
 they shall fear.

Conditional.

*Je craindrais,^b
tu craindrais,^b
il craindrait,^b
nous craindrions,^b
vous craindriez,^b
ils craindraient,^b*

I should fear.
thou wouldst fear.
he would fear.
we would fear.
you would fear.
they would fear.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je craigne,^a
que tu craignes,^a
qu'il craigne,^a
que nous craignons,^a
que vous craigniez,^a
qu'ils craignent,^a*

that I may
that thou may'st
that he may
that we may
that you may
that they may

} fear.

Imperfect.

*Que je craignisse,
que tu craignisses,
qu'il craignît,
que nous craignissions,
que vous craignissiez,
qu'ils craignissent,*

that I might
that thou mightest
that he might
that we might
that you might
that they might

} fear.

IMPERATIVE.

*Crains,
qu'il craigne,^a
craignons,^a
craignez,^a
qu'ils craignent,^a*

fear.
let him fear.
let us fear.
fear.
let them fear.

So conjugate—*Contraindre*, *contraignant*, *contraint*, *je contrains*, to constrain; *Plaindre*, to pity; *Se plaindre*, to complain; *Ceindre*, to surround, *ceignant*, *ceint*, *je ceins*; *Joindre*, *joignant*, *joint*, *je joins*, to join.

The Verb SE PLAINDRE, to complain.

Regular.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Se plaindre,</i>	to complain.
<i>Pres. part.</i>	<i>Se plaignant,</i>	complaining.
<i>Past part.</i>	<i>Plaint,</i>	complained.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>S'être plaint,</i>	to have complained.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>Je me plains,</i>	I complain.
<i>tu te plains,</i>	thou complaine st .
<i>il se plaint,</i>	he complains.
<i>nous nous plaignons,</i>	we complain.
<i>vous vous plaignez,</i>	you complain.
<i>ils se plaignent,</i>	they complain.

Imperfect.

<i>Je me plaignais,</i>	I complained.
<i>tu te plaignais,</i>	thou complained st .
<i>il se plaignait,</i>	he complained.
<i>nous nous plaignions,</i>	we complained.
<i>vous vous plaigniez,</i>	you complained.
<i>ils se plaignaient,</i>	they complained.

Preterite Definite.

<i>Je me plaignis,</i>	I complained.
<i>tu te plaignis,</i>	thou complained st .
<i>il se plaignit,</i>	he complained.
<i>nous nous plaignîmes,</i>	we complained.
<i>vous vous plaignîtes,</i>	you complained.
<i>ils se plaignirent,</i>	they complained.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>Je me suis plaint,</i>	I have complained.
<i>tu t'es plaint,</i>	thou hast complained.
<i>il s'est plaint,</i>	he has complained.
<i>nous nous sommes plaints,</i>	we have complained.
<i>vous vous êtes plaints,</i>	you have complained.
<i>ils se sont plaints,</i>	they have complained.

Preterpluperfect.

*Je m'étais plaint,
tu t'étais plaint,
il s'était plaint,
nous nous étions plaints,
vous vous étiez plaints,
ils s'étaient plaints,*

I had
thou hadst
he had
we had
you had
they had

}
complained.

Future.

*Je me plaindrai,
tu te plaindras,
il se plaindra,
nous nous plaindrons,
vous vous plaindrez,
ils se plaindront,*

I shall
thou shalt
he shall
we shall
you shall
they shall

}
complain.

Conditional.

*Je me plaindrais,
tu te plaindrais,
il se plaindrait,
nous nous plaindriions,
vous vous plaindriez,
ils se plaindraient,*

I would
thou wouldst
he would
we would
you would
they would

}
complain.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je me plaigne,
que tu te plaigne,
qu'il se plaigne,
que nous nous plaignions,
que vous vous plaigniez,
qu'ils se plaignent,*

that I may
that thou may'st
that he may
that we may
that you may
that they may

}
complain.

Imperfect.

*Que je me plaignisse,
que tu te plaignisses,
qu'il se plaignît,
que nous nous plaignissions,
que vous vous plaignissiez,
qu'ils se plaignissent,*

that I might
that thou mightest
that he might
that we might
that you might
that they might

}
complain.

IMPERATIVE.

*Plains-toi,
qu'il se plaigne,
plaignons-nous,
plaignez-vous,
qu'ils se plaignent,*

complain.
let him complain.
let us complain.
complain.
let them complain.

Verbs in AITRE, OITRE.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Connaitre,^b</i>	to know.
<i>Pres. part.</i>	<i>Connaissant,^a</i>	knowing.
<i>Past part.</i>	<i>Connu,</i>	known.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir connu,</i>	to have known.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

*Je connais,
tu connais,
il connaît,
nous connaissons,^a
vous connaissez,^a
ils connaissent,*

I know.
thou knowest.
he knows.
we know.
you know.
they know.

Imperfect.

*Je connaissais,^a
tu connaissais,^a
il connaissait,^a
nous connaissions,^a
vous connaissiez,^a
ils connaissaient,^a*

I knew.
thou knewest.
he knew.
we knew.
you knew.
they knew.

Preterite Definite.

*Je connus,
tu connus,
il connut,
nous connûmes,
vous connûtes,
ils connurent,*

I knew.
thou knewest.
he knew.
we knew.
you knew.
they knew.

Preterite Indefinite.

*J'ai connu,
tu as connu,
il a connu,
nous avons connu,
vous avez connu,
ils ont connu,*

I have known.
thou hast known.
he has known.
we have known.
you have known.
they have known.

Future.

*Je connaîtrai,^b
tu connaîtras,^b
il connaîtra,^b
nous connaîtrons,^b
vous connaîtrez,^b
ils connaîtront,^b*

I shall
thou shalt
he shall
we shall
you shall
they shall

}
know.

Conditional.

*Je connaîtrais,^b
tu connaîtrais,^b
il connaîtrait,^b
nous connaîtrions,^b
vous connaîtriez,^b
ils connaîtraient,^b*

I should
thou should'st
he should
we should
you should
they should

}
know.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je connaisse,^a
que tu connaisses,^a
qu'il connaisse,^a
que nous connaissions,^a
que vous connaissiez,^a
qu'ils connaissent,^a*

that I may
that thou may'st
that he may
that we may
that you may
that they may

}
know.

Imperfect.

*Que je connusse,
que tu connusses,
qu'il connût,
que nous connussions,
que vous connussiez,
qu'ils connussent,*

that I might
that thou mightest
that he might
that we might
that you might
that they might

}
know.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Connais,</i>	know.
<i>qu'il connaisse,^a</i>	let him know.
<i>connaissons,^a</i>	let them know.
<i>connaissez,^a</i>	know.
<i>qu'ils connaissent,^a</i>	let them know.

So *Paraître, paraissant, paru, je parais, je parus*, to appear; *Reconnaître*, to recognize; *Méconnaître*, to disregard; *Disparaître*, to disappear; *Croître, croissant, crû, je crois, je crus*, to grow; *Naître, naissant, né, je nais, je naquis*, to be born.

Verbs in IRE.

DIRE.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Dire,^b</i>	to say.
<i>Part. pres.</i>	<i>Disant,^a</i>	saying.
<i>Part. past,</i>	<i>Dit,</i>	said.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>voir dit,</i>	to have said.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>Je dis,</i>	I say.
<i>tu dis,</i>	thou sayest.
<i>il dit,</i>	he says.
<i>nous disons,^a</i>	we say.
<i>vous dites,</i>	you say.
<i>ils disent,^a</i>	they say.

Imperfect.

<i>Je disais,^a</i>	I was saying.
<i>tu disais,^a</i>	thou wert saying.
<i>il disait,^a</i>	he was saying.
<i>nous disions,^a</i>	we were saying.
<i>vous disiez,^a</i>	you were saying.
<i>ils disaient,^a</i>	they were saying.

Preterite Definite.

Je dis,
tu dis,
il dit,
nous dîmes,
vous dîtes,
ils dirent,

I said.
 thou saidst.
 he said.
 we said.
 you said.
 they said.

Preterite Indefinite.

J'ai dit,
tu as dit,
il a dit,
nous avons dit,
vous avez dit,
ils ont dit,

I have said.
 thou hast said.
 he has said.
 we have said.
 you have said.
 they have said.

* *Future.*

Je dirai,^b
tu diras,^b
il dira,^b
nous dirons,^b
vous direz,^b
ils diront,^b

I shall say.
 thou shalt say.
 he will say.
 we shall say.
 you will say.
 they will say.

Conditional.

Je dirais,^b
tu dirais,^b
il dirait,^b
nous dirions,^b
vous diriez,^b
ils diraient,^b

I should say.
 thou would'st say.
 he would say.
 we would say.
 you would say.
 they would say.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Que je dise,^a
que tu dises,^a
qu'il dise,^a
que nous disions,^a
que vous disiez,^a
qu'ils disent,^a

that I may say.
 that thou may'st say.
 that he may say.
 that we may say.
 that you may say.
 that they may say.

Imperfect.

*Que je disse,
que tu dissés,
qu'il dît,
que nous dissions,
que vous dissiez,
qu'ils dissent,*

that I might say.
that thou mightest say.
that he might say.
that we might say.
that you might say.
that they might say.

IMPERATIVE.

*Dis,
qu'il dise,^a
disons,^a
dites,
qu'ils disent,^a*

say.
let him say.
let us say.
say.
let them say.

In the same way conjugate—*Redire*, to say again, repeat; *Prédire*, to predict; *Contredire*, to contradict; with the exception that the two latter make in the second plural present Indicative, and in the second plural Imperative, *vous prédisiez, prédisiez*; *vous contredisiez, contredisiez*.

The Verb LIRE, to read.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Lire,^b</i>	to read.
<i>Part. pres.</i>	<i>Lisant,^a</i>	reading.
<i>Part. past,</i>	<i>Lu,</i>	read.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir lu,</i>	to have read.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

*Je lis,
tu lis,
il lit,
nous lisons,^a
vous lisez,^a
ils lisent,^a*

I read.
thou readest.
he reads.
we read.
you read.
they read.

Imperfect.

<i>Je lisais,^a</i>	I was reading.
<i>tu lisais,^a</i>	thou wert reading.
<i>il lisait,^a</i>	he was reading.
<i>nous lisions,^a</i>	we were reading.
<i>vous lisiez,^a</i>	you were reading.
<i>ils lisaient,^a</i>	they were reading.

Preterite Definite.

<i>Je lus,</i>	I read.
<i>tu lus,</i>	thou readest.
<i>il lut,</i>	he read.
<i>nous lûmes,</i>	we read.
<i>vous lûtes,</i>	you read.
<i>ils lurent,</i>	they read.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>J'ai lu,</i>	I have read.
<i>tu as lu,</i>	thou hast read.
<i>il a lu,</i>	he has read.
<i>nous avons lu,</i>	we have read.
<i>vous avez lu,</i>	you have read.
<i>ils ont lu,</i>	they have read.

Future.

<i>Je lirai,^b</i>	I shall read.
<i>tu liras,^b</i>	thou shalt read.
<i>il lira,^b</i>	he shall read.
<i>nous lirons,^b</i>	we shall read.
<i>vous lirez,^b</i>	you shall read.
<i>ils liront,^b</i>	they shall read.

Conditional.

<i>Je lirais,^b</i>	I would read.
<i>tu lirais,^b</i>	thou would'st read.
<i>il lirait,^b</i>	he would read.
<i>nous lirions,^b</i>	we would read.
<i>vous liriez,^b</i>	you would read.
<i>ils liraient,^b</i>	they would read.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>Que je lise,^a</i>	that I may	} read.
<i>que tu lises,^a</i>	that thou may'st	
<i>qu'il lise,^a</i>	that he may	
<i>que nous lisions,^a</i>	that we may	
<i>que vous lisiez,^a</i>	that you may	
<i>qu'ils lisent,^a</i>	that they may	

Imperfect.

<i>Que je lusse,</i>	that I might	} read.
<i>que tu lusses,</i>	that thou mightest	
<i>qu'il lût,</i>	that he might	
<i>que nous lussions,</i>	that we might	
<i>que vous lussiez,</i>	that you might	
<i>qu'ils lussent,</i>	that they might	

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Lis,</i>	read.
<i>qu'il lise,^a</i>	let him read.
<i>lisons,^a</i>	let us read.
<i>lisez,^a</i>	read.
<i>qu'ils lisent,^a</i>	let them read.

So conjugate—*Relire*, to read again ; *Elire*, *élisant*, *élu*, *j'élis*, *j'élus*, to elect ; *Réélire*, to re-elect.

The Verb SUFFIRE, to suffice.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Suffir,^b</i>	to suffice.
<i>Pres. part.</i>	<i>Suffisant,^a</i>	sufficing.
<i>Past part.</i>	<i>Suffi,</i>	sufficed.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir suffi,</i>	to have sufficed.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>Je suffis,</i>	I suffice.
<i>tu suffis,</i>	thou sufficest.
<i>il suffit,</i>	he suffices.
<i>nous suffisons,^a</i>	we suffice.
<i>vous suffisez,^a</i>	you suffice.
<i>ils suffisent,^a</i>	they suffice.

Imperfect.

*Je suffisais,^a
tu suffisais,^a
il suffisait,^a
nous suffisions,^a
vous suffiriez,^a
ils suffisaient,^a*

I sufficed.
thou sufficedst.
he sufficed.
we sufficed.
you sufficed.
they sufficed.

Preterite Definite.

*Je suffis,
tu suffis,
il suffit,
nous suffîmes,
vous suffîtes,
ils suffirent,*

I sufficed.
thou sufficedst.
he sufficed.
we sufficed.
you sufficed.
they sufficed.

Preterite Indefinite.

*J'ai suffi,
tu as suffi,
il a suffi,
nous avons suffi,
vous avez suffi,
ils ont suffi,*

I have sufficed.
thou hast sufficed.
he has sufficed.
we have sufficed.
you have sufficed.
they have sufficed.

Future.

*Je suffirai,^b
tu suffiras,^b
il suffira,^b
nous suffirons,^b
vous suffirez,^b
ils suffiront,^b*

I shall suffice.
thou shalt suffice.
he will suffice.
we shall suffice.
you will suffice.
they will suffice.

Conditional.

*Je suffirais,^b
tu suffirais,^b
il suffirait,^b
nous suffirions,^b
vous suffiriez,^b
ils suffiraient,^b*

I could suffice.
thou could'st suffice.
he could suffice.
we could suffice.
you could suffice.
they could suffice.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>Que je suffise,^a</i>	that I may	} suffice.
<i>que tu suffises,^a</i>	that thou may'st	
<i>qu'il suffise,^a</i>	that he may	
<i>que nous suffisions,^a</i>	that we may	
<i>que vous suffissiez,^a</i>	that you may	
<i>qu'ils fussent,^a</i>	that they may	

Imperfect.

<i>Que je suffisse,</i>	that I might	} suffice.
<i>que tu suffisses,</i>	that thou mightest	
<i>qu'il suffît,</i>	that he might	
<i>que nous suffissions,</i>	that we might	
<i>que vous suffissiez,</i>	that you might	
<i>qu'ils fussent,</i>	that they might	

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Suffis,</i>	suffice.
<i>qu'il suffise,^a</i>	let him suffice.
<i>suffisons,^a</i>	let us suffice.
<i>suffisez,^a</i>	suffice.
<i>qu'ils fussent,^a</i>	let them suffice.

The Verb RIRE, to laugh.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Rire,^b</i>	to laugh.
<i>Part. pres.</i>	<i>Riant,^a</i>	laughing.
<i>Part. past.</i>	<i>Ri,</i>	laughed.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir ri,</i>	to have laughed.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>Je ris,</i>	I laugh.
<i>tu ris,</i>	thou laughest.
<i>il rit,</i>	he laughs.
<i>nous rions,^a</i>	we laugh.
<i>vous riez,^a</i>	you laugh.
<i>ils rient,^a</i>	they laugh.

Imperfect.

*Je riais,^a
tu riais,^a
il riait,^a
nous riions,^a
vous riez,^a
ils riaient,^a*

I laughed.
thou wert laughing.
he was laughing.
we were laughing.
you were laughing.
they were laughing.

Preterite Definite.

*Je ris,
tu ris,
il rit,
nous rimes,
vous rîtes,
ils rirent,*

I laughed.
thou laughedst.
he laughed.
we laughed.
you laughed.
they laughed.

Preterite Indefinite.

*J'ai ri,
tu as ri,
il a ri,
nous avons ri,
vous avez ri,
ils ont ri,*

I have laughed.
thou hast laughed.
he has laughed.
we have laughed.
you have laughed.
they have laughed.

Future.

*Je rirai,^b
tu riras,^b
il rira,^b
nous rirons,^b
vous rirez,^b
ils riront,^b*

I shall laugh.
thou shalt laugh.
he will laugh.
we will laugh.
you will laugh.
they will laugh.

Conditional.

*Je rirais,^b
tu rirais,^b
il rirait,^b
nous ririons,^b
vous ririez,^b
ils riraient,^b*

I would laugh.
thou would'st laugh.
he would laugh.
we would laugh.
you would laugh.
they would laugh.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je rie,^a
que tu ries,^a
qu'il rie,^a
que nous riions,^a
que vous riez,^a
qu'ils rient,^a*

that I may
that thou may'st
that he may
that we may
that you may
that they may

}
laugh.

Imperfect.

*Que je risse,
que tu risses,
qu'il rît,
que nous rissions,
que vous rissiez,
qu'ils rissent,*

that I might
that thou mightest
that he might
that we might
that you might
that they might

}
laugh.

IMPERATIVE.

*Ris,
qu'il rie,^a
rions,^a
riez,^a
qu'ils rient,^a*

laugh.
let him laugh.
let us laugh.
laugh.
let them laugh.

In the same manner conjugate—*Sourire*, to smile.

The Verb ÉCRIRE, to write.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Écrire,^b</i>	to write.
<i>Part. pres.</i>	<i>Écrivant,^a</i>	writing.
<i>Part. past,</i>	<i>Écrit,</i>	written.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir écrit,</i>	to have written.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

*J'écris,
tu écris,
il écrit,
nous écrivons,^a
vous écrivez,^a
ils écrivent,^a*

I write.
thou writest.
he writes.
we write.
you write.
they write.

Imperfect.

*J'écrivais,^a
tu écrivais,^a
il écrivait,^a
nous écrivions,^a
vous écriviez,^a
ils écrivaient,^a*

I was writing.
thou wert writing.
he was writing.
we were writing.
you were writing.
they were writing.

Preterite Definite.

*J'écrivis,
tu écrivis,
il écrivit,
nous écrivîmes,
vous écrivîtes,
ils écrivirent,*

I wrote.
thou wrotest.
he wrote.
we wrote.
you wrote.
they wrote.

Preterite Indefinite.

*J'ai écrit,
tu as écrit,
il a écrit,
nous avons écrit,
vous avez écrit,
ils ont écrit,*

I have written.
thou hast written.
he has written.
we have written.
you have written.
they have written.

Future.

*J'écrirai,^b
tu écriras,^b
il écrira,^b
nous écrirons,^b
vous écrirez,^b
ils écriront,^b*

I shall write.
thou shalt write.
he shall write.
we shall write.
you shall write.
they shall write.

Conditional.

*J'écrirais,^b
tu écrirais,^b
il écrirait,^b
nous écririons,^b
vous écrieriez,^b
ils écriraient,^b*

I would write.
thou would'st write.
he would write.
we would write.
you would write.
they would write.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>Que j'écrive,</i> ^a	that I may write.
<i>que tu écrives,</i> ^a	that thou may'st write.
<i>qu'il écrive,</i> ^a	that he may write.
<i>que nous écrivions,</i> ^a	that we may write.
<i>que vous écriviez,</i> ^a	that you may write.
<i>qu'ils écrivent,</i> ^a	that they may write.

Imperfect.

<i>Que j'écrivisse,</i>	that I might write.
<i>que tu écrivisses,</i>	that thou mightest write.
<i>qu'il écrivît,</i>	that he might write.
<i>que nous écrivissions,</i>	that we might write.
<i>que vous écrivissiez,</i>	that you might write.
<i>qu'ils écrivissent,</i>	that they might write.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Écris,</i>	write.
<i>qu'il écrive,</i> ^a	let him write.
<i>écrivons,</i> ^a	let us write.
<i>écrivez,</i> ^a	write.
<i>qu'ils écrivent,</i> ^a	let them write.

In the same manner conjugate—*Décrire*, to describe ; *Circonscrire*, to circumscribe ; *Souscrire*, *souscrivant*, *souscrit*, *je souscris*, *je souscrivis*, to subscribe ; *Prescrire*, to prescribe.

Verbs in OIRE.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Croire,</i> ^b	to believe or think.
<i>Part. pres.</i>	<i>Croyant,</i> ^a	believing—thinking.
<i>Part. past,</i>	<i>Cru,</i>	believed—thought.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir cru,</i>	to have believed.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Je crois,
tu crois,
il croit,
nous croyons,^a
vous croyez,^a
ils croient,^a

I believe.
 thou believest.
 he believes.
 we believe.
 you believe.
 they believe.

Imperfect.

Je croyais,^a
tu croyais,^a
il croyait,^a
nous croyions,^a
vous croyiez,^a
ils croyaient,^a

I believed.
 thou believedst.
 he believed.
 we believed.
 you believed.
 they believed.

Preterite Definite.

Je crus,
tu crus,
il crut,
nous crûmes,
vous crûtes,
ils crurent,

I believed.
 thou believedst.
 he believed.
 we believed.
 you believed.
 they believed.

Preterite Indefinite.

J'ai cru,
tu as cru,
il a cru,
nous avons cru,
vous avez cru,
ils ont cru,

I have believed.
 thou hast believed.
 he has believed.
 we have believed.
 you have believed.
 they have believed.

Future.

Je croirai,^b
tu croiras,^b
il croira,^b
nous croirons,^b
vous croirez,^b
ils croiront,^b

I will believe.
 thou wilt believe.
 he will believe.
 we will believe.
 you will believe.
 they will believe.

Conditional.

*Je croirais,^b
tu croirais,^b
il croirait,^b
nous croirions,^b
vous croiriez,^b
ils cro metaient,^b*

I would believe.
thou would'st believe.
he would believe.
we would believe.
you would believe.
they would believe.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je crois,
que tu croies,
qu'il croie,
que nous croyions,^a
que vous croyiez,^a
qu'ils croient,*

that I may believe.
that thou may'st believe.
that he may believe.
that we may believe.
that you may believe.
that they may believe.

Imperfect.

*Que je crusse,
que tu crusses,
qu'il crût,
que nous crussions,
que vous crussiez,
qu'ils crussent,*

that I might believe.
that thou mightest believe.
that he might believe.
that we might believe.
that you might believe.
that they might believe.

IMPERATIVE.

*Crois,
qu'il croie,
croyons,
croyez,
qu'ils croient,*

believe.
let him believe.
let us believe.
believe.
let them believe.

The Verb BOIRE, to drink.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Boire,^b</i>	to drink.
<i>Part. pres.</i>	<i>Bovant,^a</i>	drinking.
<i>Part. past,</i>	<i>Bu,</i>	drunk.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir bu,</i>	to have drunk.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

Je bois,
tu bois,
il boit,
nous buvons,^a
vous buvez,^a
ils boivent,

I drink.
 thou drinkest.
 he drinks.
 we drink.
 you drink.
 they drink.

Imperfect.

Je buvais,^a
tu buvais,^a
il buvait,^a
nous buvions,^a
vous buviez,^a
ils buvaient,^a

I was drinking.
 thou wert drinking.
 he was drinking.
 we were drinking.
 you were drinking.
 they were drinking.

Preterite Definite.

Je bus,
tu bus,
il but,
nous bûmes,
vous bûtes,
ils burent,

I drank.
 thou drankest.
 he drank.
 we drank.
 you drank.
 they drank.

Preterite Indefinite.

J'ai bu,
tu as bu,
il a bu,
nous avons bu,
vous avez bu,
ils ont bu,

I have drunk.
 thou hast drunk.
 he has drunk.
 we have drunk.
 you have drunk.
 they have drunk.

Future.

Je boirai,^b
tu boiras,^b
il boira,^b
nous boirons,^b
vous boirez,^b
ils boiront,^b

I shall drink.
 thou shalt drink.
 he shall drink.
 we shall drink.
 you shall drink.
 they shall drink.

Conditional.

*Je boirais,^b
tu boirais,^b
il boirait,^b
nous boirions,^b
vous boiriez,^b
ils boiraient,^b*

I would drink.
thou would'st drink.
he would drink.
we would drink.
you would drink.
they would drink.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je boive,
que tu boives,
qu'il boive,
que nous buvions,^a
que vous buviez,^a
qu'ils boivent,*

that I may drink.
that thou may'st drink.
that he may drink.
that we may drink.
that you may drink.
that they may drink.

Imperfect.

*Que je busse,
que tu busses,
qu'il bût,
que nous bussions,
que vous bussiez,
qu'ils bussent,*

that I might drink.
that thou mightest drink.
that he might drink.
that we might drink.
that you might drink.
that they might drink.

IMPERATIVE.

*Bois,
qu'il boive,
buvons,^a
buvez,^a
qu'ils boivent,*

drink.
let him drink.
let us drink.
drink.
let them drink.

Verbs in UIRE.

CONDUIRE, to conduct.

*Infinitive,
Pres. part.
Past part.
Past infin.*

*Conduire,^b
Conduisant,^a
Conduit,
Avoir conduit,*

[to guide, to drive.
to conduct, to take, to lead,
conducting.
conducted.
to have conducted.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

*Je conduis,
tu conduis,
il conduit,
nous conduisons,^a
vous conduisez,^a
ils conduisent,^a*

I conduct.
thou conductest.
he conducts.
we conduct.
you conduct.
they conduct.

Imperfect.

*Je conduisais,^a
tu conduisais,^a
il conduisait,^a
nous conduisions,^a
vous conduisiez,^a
ils conduisaient,^a*

I was conducting.
thou wert conducting.
he was conducting.
we were conducting.
you were conducting.
they were conducting.

Preterite Definite.

*Je conduisis,
tu conduisis,
il conduisit,
nous conduisîmes,
vous conduisîtes,
ils conduisirent,*

I conducted.
thou conductedst.
he conducted.
we conducted.
you conducted.
they conducted.

Preterite Indefinite.

*J'ai conduit,
tu as conduit,
il a conduit,
nous avons conduit,
vous avez conduit,
ils ont conduit,*

I have conducted.
thou hast conducted.
he has conducted.
we have conducted.
you have conducted.
they have conducted.

Future.

*Je conduirai,^b
tu conduiras,^b
il conduira,^b
nous conduirons,^b
vous conduirez,^b
ils conduiront,^b*

I will conduct.
thou wilt conduct.
he will conduct.
we will conduct.
you will conduct.
they will conduct.

Conditional.

<i>Je conduirais,</i> ^b	I would conduct.
<i>tu conduirais,</i> ^b	thou would'st conduct.
<i>il conduirait,</i> ^b	he would conduct.
<i>nous conduirions,</i> ^b	we would conduct.
<i>vous conduiriez,</i> ^b	you would conduct.
<i>ils conduiraient,</i> ^b	they would conduct.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>Que je conduise,</i>	that I may	} conduct.
<i>que tu conduises,</i>	that thou may'st	
<i>qu'il conduise,</i>	that he may	
<i>que nous conduisions,</i>	that we may	
<i>que vous conduisiez,</i>	that you may	
<i>qu'ils conduisent,</i>	that they may	

Imperfect.

<i>Que je conduisisse,</i>	that I might	} conduct.
<i>que tu conduisisses,</i>	that thou mightest	
<i>qu'il conduisît,</i>	that he might	
<i>que nous conduisissions,</i>	that we might	
<i>que vous conduisissiez,</i>	that you might	
<i>qu'ils conduisissent,</i>	that they might	

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Conduis,</i>	conduct.
<i>qu'il conduise,</i>	let him conduct.
<i>conduisons,</i>	let us conduct.
<i>conduisez,</i>	conduct.
<i>qu'ils conduisent,</i>	let them conduct.

In like manner conjugate—*Produire*, to produce; *Traduire*, to translate; *Nuire*, *nuisant*, *nuî*, *je nuis*, *je nuisis*, to hurt; *Luire*, *luisant*, *lui*, *je luis*, *je luisis*, to shine.

The Verb FAIRE, to do.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Faire,</i>	to do—to make.
<i>Part. pres.</i>	<i>Faisant,^a</i>	doing—making.
<i>Part. past,</i>	<i>Fait,</i>	made—done.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir fait,</i>	to have made or done.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>Je fais,</i>	I do or make.
<i>tu fais,</i>	thou doest.
<i>il fait,</i>	he does.
<i>nous faisons,^a</i>	we do.
<i>vous faites,</i>	you do.
<i>ils font,</i>	they do.

Imperfect.

<i>Je faisais,^a</i>	I was making.
<i>tu faisais,^a</i>	thou wert making.
<i>il faisait,^a</i>	he was making.
<i>nous faisions,^a</i>	we were making.
<i>vous faisiez,^a</i>	you were making.
<i>ils faisaient,^a</i>	they were making.

Preterite Definite.

<i>Je fis,</i>	I did.
<i>tu fis,</i>	thou didst.
<i>il fit,</i>	he did.
<i>nous fîmes,</i>	we did.
<i>vous fîtes,</i>	you did.
<i>ils firent,</i>	they did.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>J'ai fait,</i>	I have done.
<i>tu as fait,</i>	thou hast done.
<i>il a fait,</i>	he has done.
<i>nous avons fait,</i>	we have done.
<i>vous avez fait,</i>	you have done.
<i>ils ont fait,</i>	they have done.

Future.

*Je ferai,
tu feras,
il fera,
nous ferons,
vous ferez,
ils feront,*

I shall do.
thou shalt do.
he will do.
we will do.
you will do.
they shall do.

Conditional.

*Je ferais,
tu ferais,
il ferait,
nous ferions,
vous feriez,
ils feraient,*

I would do.
thou would'st do.
he would do.
we would do.
you would do.
they would do.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je fasse,
que tu fasses,
qu'il fasse,
que nous fassions,
que vous fassiez,
qu'ils fassent,*

that I may do.
that thou may'st do.
that he may do.
that we may do.
that you may do.
that they may do.

Imperfect.

*Que je fisse,
que tu fisses,
qu'il fit,
que nous fissions,
que vous fissiez,
qu'ils fissent,*

that I might do.
that thou mightest do.
that he might do.
that we might do.
that you might do.
that they might do.

IMPERATIVE.

*Fais,
qu'il fasse,
faisons,
faites,
qu'ils fassent,*

do.
let him do.
let us do.
do.
let them do.

So *Contrefaire*, to counterfeit ; *Défaire*, to rid, to undo, to defeat ;
Se défaire, to get rid of.

The Verb VIVRE, to live.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Vivre,</i> ^b	to live.
<i>Pres. part.</i>	<i>Vivant,</i> ^a	living.
<i>Part. past,</i>	<i>Vécu,</i>	lived.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir vécu,</i>	to have lived.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>Je vis,</i>	I live.
<i>tu vis,</i>	thou livest.
<i>il vit,</i>	he lives.
<i>nous vivons,</i> ^a	we live.
<i>vous vivez,</i> ^a	you live.
<i>ils vivent,</i> ^a	they live.

Imperfect.

<i>Je vivais,</i> ^a	I lived.
<i>tu vivais,</i> ^a	thou livedst.
<i>il vivait,</i> ^a	he lived.
<i>nous vivions,</i> ^a	we lived.
<i>vous viviez,</i> ^a	you lived.
<i>ils vivaient,</i> ^a	they lived.

Preterite Definite.

<i>Je vécus,</i>	I lived.
<i>tu vécus,</i>	thou livedst.
<i>il vécut,</i>	he lived.
<i>nous vécûmes,</i>	we lived.
<i>vous vécûtes,</i>	you lived.
<i>ils vécurent,</i>	they lived.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>J'ai vécu,</i>	I have lived.
<i>tu as vécu,</i>	thou hast lived.
<i>il a vécu,</i>	he has lived.
<i>nous avons vécu,</i>	we have lived.
<i>vous avez vécu,</i>	you have lived.
<i>ils ont vécu,</i>	they have lived.

Future.

Je vivrai,^b
tu vivras,^b
il vivra,^b
nous vivrons,^b
vous vivrez,^b
ils vivront,^b

I shall live.
 thou shalt live.
 he shall live.
 we shall live.
 you shall live.
 they shall live.

Conditional.

Je vivrais,^b
tu vivrais,^b
il vivrait,^b
nous vivrions,^b
vous vivriez,^b
ils vivraient,^b

I would live.
 thou would'st live.
 he would live.
 we would live.
 you would live.
 they would live.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

Que je vive,^a
que tu viwes,^a
qu'il vive,^a
que nous vivions,^a
que vous viviez,^a
qu'ils vivent,^a

that I may live.
 that thou may'st live.
 that he may live.
 that we may live.
 that you may live.
 that they may live.

Imperfect.

Que je vécusse,
que tu vécusses,
qu'il vécut,
que nous véussions,
que vous véussiez,
qu'ils véussent,

that I might live.
 that thou might'st live.
 that he might live.
 that we might live.
 that you might live.
 that they might live.

IMPERATIVE.

Vis,
qu'il vive,
vivons,
vivez,
qu'ils vivent,

live.
 let him live.
 let us live.
 live.
 let them live.

So *Survivre*, to survive.

Verbs in OUDRE.

COUDRE, to sew.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Coudre,</i> ^b	to sew.
<i>Part. pres.</i>	<i>Cousant,</i> ^a	sewing.
<i>Part. past,</i>	<i>Cousu,</i>	sewed.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir cousu,</i>	to have sewed.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>Je couds,</i>	I sew.
<i>tu couds,</i>	thou sewest.
<i>il coud,</i>	he sews.
<i>nous cousons,</i> ^a	we sew.
<i>vous cousez,</i> ^a	you sew.
<i>ils cousent,</i> ^a	they sew.

Imperfect.

<i>Je cousais,</i> ^a	I was sewing.
<i>tu cousais,</i> ^a	thou wert sewing.
<i>il cousait,</i> ^a	he was sewing.
<i>nous cousions,</i> ^a	we were sewing.
<i>vous cousiez,</i> ^a	you were sewing.
<i>ils cousaient,</i> ^a	they were sewing.

Præterite Definite.

<i>Je cousis,</i>	I sewed.
<i>tu cousis,</i>	thou sewedst.
<i>il cousit,</i>	he sewed.
<i>nous cousîmes,</i>	we sewed.
<i>vous cousîtes,</i>	you sewed. .
<i>ils cousirent,</i>	they sewed.

Præterite Indefinite.

<i>J'ai cousu,</i>	I have sewed.
<i>tu as cousu,</i>	thou hast sewed.
<i>il a cousu,</i>	he has sewed.
<i>nous avons cousu,</i>	we have sewed.
<i>vous avez cousu,</i>	you have sewed.
<i>ils ont cousu,</i>	they have sewed.

Future.

*Je coudrai,^b
tu coudras,^b
il coudra,^b
nous coudrons,^b
vous coudrez,^b
ils coudront,^b*

I will sew.
thou wilt sew.
he will sew.
we will sew.
you will sew.
they will sew.

Conditional.

*Je coudrais,^b
tu coudrais,^b
il coudrait,^b
nous coudrions,^b
vous coudriez,^b
ils coudraient,^b*

I would sew.
thou would'st sew.
he would sew.
we would sew.
you would sew.
they would sew.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je couse,^a
que tu couses,^a
qu'il couse,^a
que nous cousions,^a
que vous cousiez,^a
qu'ils cousent,^a*

that I may sew.
that thou may'st sew.
that he may sew.
that we may sew.
that you may sew.
that they may sew.

Imperfect.

*Que je cousisse,
que tu cousisses,
qu'il cousît,
que nous cousissions,
que vous cousissiez,
qu'ils cousissent,*

that I might sew.
that thou mightest sew.
that they might sew.
that we might sew.
that you might sew.
that they might sew.

IMPERATIVE.

*Couds,
qu'il couse,^a
cousons,^a
cousez,^a
qu'ils cousent,^a*

sew.
let him sew.
let us sew.
sew.
let them sew.

The Verb MOUDRE, to grind.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Moudre,^b</i>	to grind (corn.)
<i>Part. pres.</i>	<i>Moulant,^a</i>	grinding.
<i>Part. past,</i>	<i>Moulu,</i>	ground.
<i>Past infin.</i>	<i>Avoir moulu,</i>	to have ground.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>Je mouds,</i>	I grind.
<i>tu mouds,</i>	thou grindest.
<i>il moud,</i>	he grinds.
<i>nous moulons,^a</i>	we grind.
<i>vous moulez,^a</i>	you grind.
<i>ils moulent,^a</i>	they grind.

Imperfect.

<i>Je moulais,^a</i>	I ground.
<i>tu moulais,^a</i>	thou groundest.
<i>il moulait,^a</i>	he ground.
<i>nous moulions,^a</i>	we ground.
<i>vous mouliez,^a</i>	you ground.
<i>ils moulaient,^a</i>	they ground.

Preterite Definite.

<i>Je moulus,</i>	I ground.
<i>tu moulus,</i>	thou groundest.
<i>il moulut,</i>	he ground.
<i>nous moulûmes,</i>	we ground.
<i>vous moulûtes,</i>	you ground.
<i>ils moulurent,</i>	they ground.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>J'ai moulu,</i>	I have ground.
<i>tu as moulu,</i>	thou hast ground.
<i>il a moulu,</i>	he has ground.
<i>nous avons moulu,</i>	we have ground.
<i>vous avez moulu,</i>	you have ground.
<i>ils ont moulu,</i>	they have ground.

Future.

*Je moudrai,^b
tu moudras,^b
il moudra,^b
nous moudrons,^b
vous moudrez,^b
ils moudront,^b*

I shall grind,
thou shalt grind.
he shall grind.
we shall grind.
you shall grind.
they shall grind.

Conditional.

*Je moudrais,^b
tu moudrais,^b
il moudrait,^b
nous moudrions,^b
vous moudriez,^b
ils moudraient,^b*

I would grind.
thou would'st grind.
he would grind.
we would grind.
you would grind.
they would grind.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

*Que je moule,^a
que tu moules,^a
qu'il moule,^a
que nous moulions,^a
que vous mouliez,^a
qu'ils moulent,^a*

that I may grind.
that thou may'st grind.
that he may grind.
that we may grind.
that you may grind.
that they may grind.

Imperfect.

*Que je moulusse,
que tu moulusses,
qu'il moulût,
que nous moulussions,
que vous moulussiez,
qu'ils moulussent,*

that I might grind.
that thou might'st grind.
that he might grind.
that we might grind.
that you might grind.
that they might grind.

IMPERATIVE.

*Mouls,
qu'il moule,
moulons,
moulez,
qu'ils moulent,*

grind.
let him grind.
let us grind.
grind.
let them grind.

In like manner conjugate—*Émoudre*, to grind (blades.)

The Verb VAINCRE, to conquer.

<i>Infin. pres.</i>	<i>Vaincre</i> , ^b	to conquer.
<i>Part. pres.</i>	<i>Vainquant</i> , ^a	conquering.
<i>Part. past,</i>	<i>Vaincu</i> ,	conquered.
<i>Infin. past,</i>	<i>Avoir vaincu</i> ,	to have conquered.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>Je vains,</i>	I conquer.
<i>tu vains,</i>	thou conquerest.
<i>il vaine,</i>	he conquers.
<i>nous vainquons</i> , ^a	we conquer.
<i>vous vainquez</i> , ^a	you conquer.
<i>ils vainquent</i> , ^a	they conquer.

Imperfect.

<i>Je vainquais</i> , ^a	I was conquering.
<i>tu vainquais</i> , ^a	thou wert conquering.
<i>il vainquait</i> , ^a	he was conquering.
<i>nous vainquions</i> , ^a	we were conquering.
<i>vous vainquiez</i> , ^a	you were conquering.
<i>ils vainquaient</i> , ^a	they were conquering.

Preterite Definite.

<i>Je vainquis,</i>	I conquered.
<i>tu vainquis,</i>	thou conqueredst.
<i>il vainquit,</i>	he conquered.
<i>nous vainquîmes,</i>	we conquered.
<i>vous vainquîtes,</i>	you conquered.
<i>ils vainquirent,</i>	they conquered.

Preterite Indefinite.

<i>J'ai vaincu,</i>	I have conquered.
<i>tu as vaincu,</i>	thou hast conquered.
<i>il a vaincu,</i>	he has conquered.
<i>nous avons vaincu,</i>	we have conquered.
<i>vous avez vaincu,</i>	you have conquered.
<i>ils ont vaincu,</i>	they have conquered.

Future.

*Je vaincrai,^b
tu vaincras,^b
il vaincra,^b
nous vaincrons,^b
vous vaincrez,^b
ils vaincront,^b*

I shall conquer.
thou shalt conquer.
he shall conquer.
we shall conquer.
you shall conquer.
they shall conquer.

Conditional.

*Je vaincrais,
tu vaincrais,
il vaincrait,
nous vaincrist,
vous vaincristez,
ils vaincraient,*

I would conquer.
thou would'st conquer.
he would conquer.
we would conquer.
you would conquer.
they would conquer.

SUBJUNCTIVE.*Present.*

*Que je vainque,^a
que tu vainques,^a
qu'il vainque,^a
que nous vainquions,^a
que vous vainquiez,^a
qu'ils vainquent,^a*

that I may conquer.
that thou may'st conquer.
that he may conquer.
that we may conquer.
that you may conquer.
that they may conquer.

Imperfect.

*Que je vainquisse,
que tu vainquisses,
qu'il vainquît,
que nous vainquissions,
que vous vainquissiez,
qu'ils vainquissent,*

that I might conquer.
that thou mightest conquer.
that he might conquer.
that we might conquer.
that you might conquer.
that they might conquer.

IMPERATIVE.

*Vaincs,
qu'il vainque,^a
vainquons,^a
vainquez,^a
qu'ils vainquent,^a*

conquer.
let him conquer.
let us conquer.
conquer.
let them conquer.

So *Convaincre*, to convince.

•

•

•

EXERCISES

ON THE

FRENCH ACCIDENCE.

EXERCISE I.

On the use of the Definite Article.—Accidence, page 10.

Translate the following into French, using the Definite Article before each Noun, in the same gender and number as the Noun. [A Vocabulary will be found at the end.]

The sun. The moon. The stars. The clouds. The world. The air. The sky. The rain. The wind. The trees. The plants. The grass. The hatchet. The hero.

The light of the sun. The brilliancy of the moon. The lightness of the air. The twinkling of the stars. The rapidity of lightning. The revolutions of the earth. The creation of the world. The darkness of the clouds. The depth of the sea. The handle of the door. The fingers of the hand. The soles of the feet. The pupil of the eye.

To the castle. To the house. To the castles. To the houses. To the boys and to the girls. To the animals. To the kinds. To the inhabitants and to the dwellings. To the wheels of a clock.

Earth, air, fire, and water. Joy and gladness. Wisdom and folly. Height and depth. Breadth and circumference. Thunder and lightning. Industry and idleness. Truth and honesty. Pepper and salt. Greek and Latin. Good and evil. Duty. Devotion. Troubles, vexations, children, customs, habits, words. Milk and honey. Hunger and want. Bread, meat, wine, and beer. The fish of the sea. The fowls of the air. The beasts of the field. The rashness of youth. The flames of love. The misfortunes of war. The evils of drunkenness.

To the pleasures of society. To the depths of the sea. To the flowers of the fields. To the rules of propriety. To the charm of poetry. To the eccentricities of genius. To the needs of man. To the pursuits of men. To the ways of women.

EXERCISE II.

Partitive Article.—Accidence, page 11.

Give the French for the following Nouns, using the Partitive Article before each, in the gender and number of the Noun.

Wine and beer. Bread and butter. Mutton and potatoes. Milk, honey, sheep, oxen, corn, herds, cattle. Pins and needles. Wood and coals. Boys and girls. Pens, ink, and paper. Pepper and salt. Coffee, tea, meat, eggs, hay, straw, grass, and corn.

Verses. Prizes. Prizes for verses. Things for children. Robbers with knives, sticks, and pistols. Houses with chimneys. Windows with panes. Doors with locks. Trees with leaves.

Any tea? Some cake? No; coffee and bread. Some meat? No; some chicken. Any sauce? No.

EXERCISE III.

Indefinite Article.—Accidence, page 11.

Write the French for the following—

A bird, birds. A place, places. A metal, metals. A wood, woods. A scythe, scythes. A hatchet, hatchets. A hero, heroes. An evil, evils. An eye, eyes. A voice, voices.

The height of a man. The colour of a flower. The length of a sermon. The taste of a fruit. The bones of a fish. The blade of a knife. The barrel of a gun. To a garden. At a ball. To a church. At a review. To the sleeve of a coat. With the handle of a broom. The stone of an apricot. The hands of a clock or watch.

EXERCISE IV.

Write the plural of the following, with the English, using the Partitive Article.

Fils, son. *Bas*, stocking. *Temps*, time. *Bras*, arm. *Secours*, help. *Mets*, dish. *Revers*, failure. *Lis*, lily. *Mépris*, contempt. *Poids*, weight. *Villageois*, a villager. *Cheveu*, hair. *Cheval*, horse. *Congrès*, congress. *Rubis*, ruby. *Pas*, step. *Encens*, incense. *Feu*, fire. *Vœu*, vow, prayer. *Bijou*, jewel. *Hibou*, owl. *Embarras*, trouble. *Château*, castle. *Chapeau*, hat. *Nez*, nose. *Prix*, prize, price. *Mois*, month. *Voix*, f. voice. *Avis*, advice, notice, opinion. *Œil*, eye. *Soupirail*, a cellar window. *Journal*, newspaper. *Succès*, success. *Fauteuil*, arm chair. *Rideau*, curtain. *Tapis*, carpet.

EXERCISE V.

On the agreement of Noun and Adjective.—Accidence, p. 24.

MASCULINE NOUNS.

§ *Use the Definite Article in all the following sentences.—Accidence, page 10.*

The great¹ tub. The last¹ judgment. The Austrian general. The great¹ monarch. Greek fire. Cultivated nature. Wild nature. The unfathomable deep. The Roman empire. The Polish people. Broad¹ daylight. The right foot. The left eye. The rapid river. The courteous prince. Past times. Civilized peoples. Pleasant people, *pl.* The brave knight. The fearless warrior. The hard-working boy. The noisy boys. 'The little¹ fiddler. Grey paper. Fine gold. The old¹ cloak. The feudal times. Warlike exploits. Blue eyes. Grey hair, *pl.* Useless speeches. The dark passages. Pagan temples. Gentle means. False¹ friends. The French soldiers. The English ministers.

EXERCISE VI.

With the following use the Partitive Article.—
Accidence, page 11.

Quicksilver. Expressive eyes. Wild fruit. Self-love. Dry wood. Rare¹ animals. Fierce looks. Angry¹ words. Broken pots. Extensive domains. Deep feelings. False¹ friends. High-spirited horses. Tiresome people, *pl.* Flattering expressions. Amusing books. Old¹ clothes. Sweet dishes. English officers. Good¹ bread. Bad¹ wine. Wise¹ counsels. Little¹ lambs.

With the following use the Indefinite Article.—
Accidence, page 11.

A big¹ man. Big¹ men. A fierce look. Fierce looks. A slight¹ noise. Slight noises. A little¹ cry. Little¹ cries. A generous sentiment. Generous sentiments. Soft language. Real¹ good. Indomitable courage. Three acres. Imperturbable composure. An old custom. A powerful lord. A victorious prince. An eloquent speech.

1. In these Exercises, the Adjectives thus marked are to precede the Nouns.

EXERCISE VII.

FEMININE NOUNS.

§ *Use the Definite Article.—Accidence, page 10.*

The French language. The poor¹ woman. Consular dignity. The great¹ army. The victorious nations. The deep sea. Greek literature. The Protestant church. The amiable¹ young lady. The habitable earth. The high¹ walls. The lofty towers. The lordly dwellings. The shining river. The poor¹ young¹ girls. Creeping plants. The left bank. The right bank. The following night. Last year. The Swiss guard. The high road. Good discipline. Rough manners. The holy alliance. The solemn hour. Eternal life.

Use the Indefinite Article.—Accidence, p. 11.

A curious invention. Sweet-smelling herbs. A strange adventure. A splendid fortune. A quiet life. A stormy youth. Generous inclinations. Stifling heat. Heroic patience. Scrupulous reserve. Dazzling whiteness. Trivial conduct. Idle words.

EXERCISE VIII.

Guilty¹ thoughts. A just reward. A sorrowful countenance. Successful enterprises. Merry meetings. A pleasant evening. Brilliant society. Bewitching manners. An enchanting voice. A sharp¹ pain. Deep¹ emotion. A bustling woman. The active voice. A brisk correspondence. Great learning. Frequent opportunities. A glorious peace. Ruinous wars. Insatiable thirst. Ravenous hunger. Untiring patience.

Use the Partitive Article.—Accidence, p. 11.

Pretty¹ flowers. Good¹ beer. Immense wealth. Good¹ cassia. Bad ink. Dirty water. Raw meat. Green mustard. Real¹ sufferings. Persuasive words. Melted snow. Mincing ways. Deceitful letters. Old¹ slippers. Trumpery excuses. Ingenious¹ defeats.

EXERCISE IX.

Adjectives of both genders in the Comparative Degree.—Accidence, page 28.

Use the Indefinite Article.

A better¹ road. A better¹ answer. Better¹ advice. Better¹ dispositions. A worse¹ accident. Worse¹ evils. A more cultivated style. Worthier¹ objects. A more dangerous enterprise. Thicker¹ darkness. Less terrible evils. Greater¹ successes. Greater¹ success. A more desperate enemy. A happier world. Greener fields and thicker foliage. Brighter flowers and purer air.

As Superlatives in French.

The lessér, the greater, the higher, the taller, the more important, the less significant.

Superlative Degree.—Accidence, page 28.

The best¹ apartment. The best¹ way. The most elegant manners. The truest saying. The most evident proof. The worst of evils. The darkest and most threatening sky. The highest spirits. With the best intentions. The inhabitants of the most distant planet. The tops of the highest mountains. To sing without the slightest effort. Rewards for the most diligent boys; punishments for the idlest. Success to the ablest. Glory to the most fortunate. The most delightful young¹ man. The most interesting young lady.

EXERCISE X.

On the Verb Avoir.—Accidence, page 33.

To have time. To have money. To have patience. To have ambition. To have troubles.

Having friends. Having relations. Having power. Having ink.

Not to have time. To have no money. To have no patience. To have no ambition. Not to have any troubles.

Having no friends. Not having any relations. Having no power. Having no ink.

Du temps. De l'argent. De la patience. De l'ambition. Des peines.

Des amis. Des parents. Du pouvoir. De l'encre.

I have an uncle. Thou hast a friend. He has a servant. We have a cottage. You have a garden. They have a park.

I have no uncle. Thou hast no friend. He has no servant. We have not a cottage. You have no garden. They have no park.

Have I any enemies? Hast thou any relations? Has she any fortune? Have we any guns? Have you any men? Have they any ships?

Have I no enemies? Hast thou no relations? Has she no fortune? Have we no guns? Have you no men? Have they no ships?

I have finished. He has not begun. Has she not written? Have you heard, or did you hear? Have they tried? Have they not answered?

Un oncle. Un ami. Un domestique. Une chaumière. Un jardin. Un parc.

Des ennemis. Des parents. De la fortune. Des canons. Des hommes. Des navires.

Fini. Commencé. Écrit. Entendu. Essayé. Répondu.

EXERCISE XI.

I had ordered. I had not counter-ordered. I had given notice. He had pronounced. We had run. You had walked. Had you begun? Had you not finished? They had laughed.

I had fruit. You had flowers. He had wine. We had wealth. You had influence. They had lands.

I had no fruit. You had no flowers. He had no wine. We had no wealth. You had no influence. They had no lands.

Had I any lucifers? Had you any bread? Had he any meat? Had we any furniture? Had you only knives and forks? Had they any fire?

Had I no lucifers? Had you no bread? Had he no meat? Had we no furniture? Had you no knives and forks? Had they no fire?

Commandé, contremandé, averti, prononcé, cours, marché, commencé, fini, ri.

Du fruit, des fleurs, du vin, des richesses, du crédit, des terres.

Des allumettes, du pain, de la viande, des meubles, des couteaux et des fourchettes, du feu.

EXERCISE XII.

See Accidence, page 36.

In interrogative sentences, if the nominative (subject) is a noun or proper name, mention it before the verb, and use a personal pronoun after the verb, to agree with it.


England has a queen. Has England a queen? France has an emperor. Has not France an emperor? The queen has ministers. The ministers have duties. The lion has a

mane. Has the lion a mane? Elephants have a trunk and tusks. Has not the wild-boar tusks? Men have eyes, noses, mouths, ears, hands, and feet. Have women eyes, noses, mouths, ears, hands, and feet?

The picture had a frame. Had the picture a frame? Had not the table a cloth? Had the room curtains? The room had no curtains. The curtains had no tassels. There the cats had no tails. Had the cats no tails?

L'Angleterre, une reine, la France, un empereur, des ministres, des devoirs, lion, crinière, éléphant, défenses, sanglier, les hommes, un nez, une bouche, des oreilles, des mains, des pieds, les femmes, le tableau, un cadre, la table, un tapis, la chambre, des rideaux, des glands, les chats, des queues.

EXERCISE XIII.

 *The personal pronouns (le it, him; la, her, it; les, them; en, some, any, none, of it or of them; nous, us; vous, you; lui, to him; leur, to them;) go before the verb.*

The synonymous terms to be rendered by one translation only.—I have it. I have them. I have some (of it, or of them.) I have not it. I have not them. I have none, (not of it, or of them.) Thou hast none. He has some. He has them, or has got them. He has none, or he has not any; he has got none, or he has not got any. They have not got it, or have not it. They have not got them, or have not them. They have not got any, or have none of it or of them.

Have you got them, or have you them? Has he got it, or has he it? Have they any (or of it?) Have they not got them, or have they not them? Have they none? Has not he got any, or has he none? Has she any? I had it. They had some. We had none. Had you none? Had he any? Had she got them, or had she them? Had you got it, or had you it? They had none. Had they none? Had they got them, or had they them?

EXERCISE XIV.

Use the Preterite indefinite J'ai eu.—I have had.
I have had some trouble. He has had some luck. You (sing.) have been lucky, *or* have had some luck. We have had some good fortune. We have been lucky. You have had bad fortune. We have been unlucky, *or* have had some ill-luck. They have had some trouble.

I have not had. I have had no trouble. I have had no difficulties. They have had no success. I have had it. I have had them. I have had some. I have not had it. I have not had any, *or* I have had none. Have I had . . ? Has he had. . . ? Has he had it? Has he had any? Has he not had any? Has she not had some? Yes, she has, (she has had of it.) We had them. Had you them? Had you any of them? Have you not had any? No, I have not, (I have not had of them.) They have had none. They have not had it.

EXERCISE XV.

FUTURE AND CONDITIONAL.

The restrictives but, nothing but, only, *are rendered by ne before the verb, and que after.*

The negatives nothing, never, nobody, *by ne before the verb ; rien, jamais, or personne, after.*

I shall have a room.¹ The room shall have furniture.² We shall have tables³ and chairs.⁴ Thou shalt have but one table and one chair. You will have something;⁵ they will have nothing.⁶ The image⁷ shall have arms⁸ and legs.⁹ The young lady¹⁰ will have money.¹¹ The boy¹² will have no money. Soon your chair will only have one leg.

I should never have the patience.¹³ I would have no one. I would have but one hat.¹⁴ The room would have but one window.¹⁵ We should have nothing but troubles.¹⁶ You would have no one. Would you have no one? I should not have any one. They would have nothing.

¹*Chambre*, ²*meubles*, pl. ³*table*, ⁴*chaise*, ⁵*quelque chose*, ⁶*rien*, ⁷*magot*, ⁸*bras*, ⁹*jambe*, ¹⁰*demoiselle*, ¹¹*argent*, ¹²*garçon*, ¹³*patience*, ¹⁴*chapeau*, ¹⁵*fenêtre*, ¹⁶*peines*.

Copy the following sentences for practice.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

Do you wish me to have ?	<i>Voulez-vous que j'aie ?</i>
does any one wish thee to have ?	<i>veut-on que tu aies ?</i>
do you wish him to have ?	<i>désirez-vous qu'il ait ?</i>
do you mean her to have ?	<i>entendez-vous qu'elle ait ?</i>
does he wish us to have ?	<i>veut-il que nous ayons ?</i>
do they wish you to have ?	<i>veulent-ils que vous ayez ?</i>
do you wish them to have ?	<i>voulez-vous qu'ils aient ?</i>

He wishes me to have,	<i>Il veut que j'aie.</i>
I do not wish thee to have,	<i>je ne veux pas que tu aies.</i>
we wish him to have,	<i>nous désirons qu'il ait.</i>
he means us to have,	<i>il entend que nous ayons.</i>
we do not mean you to have,	<i>nous n'entendons pas que vous ayez.</i>
we mean them to have,	<i>nous entendons qu'ils aient.</i>

It is of importance that I should	have,	<i>Il importe que j'aie.</i>
„ „ that you should	have,	„ <i>que tu aies.</i>
„ „ that he should	have,	„ <i>qu'il ait.</i>
„ „ that we should	have,	„ <i>que nous ayons.</i>
„ „ that you should	have,	„ <i>que vous ayez.</i>
„ „ that they should	have,	„ <i>qu'ils aient.</i>

Although I have,	<i>Quoi que j'aie.</i>
although you have,	<i>quoi que tu aies.</i>
provided that he has,	<i>pourvu qu'il ait.</i>
although we have,	<i>quoi que nous ayons.</i>
provided you have,	<i>pourvu que vous ayez,</i>
albeit that they have,	<i>encore qu'ils aient.</i>

He approves of my having.	<i>Il approuve que j'aie.</i>
he does not approve of your having,	<i>il n'approuve pas que tu aies.</i>
without his having,	<i>sans qu'il ait.</i>
without our having,	<i>sans que nous ayons.</i>
without your having,	<i>sans que vous ayez.</i>
without their having,	<i>sans qu'ils aient.</i>
I doubt her having,	<i>je doute qu'elle ait.</i>
I doubt their having,	<i>je doute qu'ils aient.</i>

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

He wished me to have,	<i>Il voulait que j'eusse.</i>
I intended you to have,	<i>j'entendais que tu eusses.</i>
I doubted his having,	<i>je doutais qu'il eût.</i>
he regretted our having,	<i>il regrettait que nous eussions.</i>
I did not wish you to have,	<i>je ne voulais pas que vous eussiez.</i>
did you wish them to have?	<i>voulais-tu qu'ils eussent ?</i>

Without my having,	<i>Sans que j'eusse.</i>
without your having,	<i>sans que tu eusses.</i>
although he had,	<i>quoiqu'il eût.</i>
albeit we had,	<i>encore que nous eussions.</i>
provided you had,	<i>pourvu que vous eussiez.</i>
without their having,	<i>sans qu'ils eussent.</i>

EXERCISE XVI.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

The personal pronouns in the genitive, dative, and accusative follow the verb in the Imperative mood affirmative second singular, and first and second plural.—Accidence, page 29.

Have this. Have that. Have this one, *m.* Have that one, *f.* Have those. Have it. Have some (of it.) Let him have clothes.¹ Let us have enjoyment.² Have patience. Let them have rest.³ Let them have some. Do not have it. Do not have them. Do not have any (of it, or of

them.) Let him not have that. Let him not have any. Let him have none. Let us have no trouble.⁴ Let us have no light.⁵ Do not let us have them. Let us have no enemies.⁶ Have no friends.⁷ Have no disputes.⁸ Do not have any. Let them have no peace.⁹ Let them not have it. Let them have none.

¹*Habits*, ²*plaisir*, ³*repos*, ⁴*ennui*, ⁵*lumière*, ⁶*ennemi*, ⁷*amis*, ⁸*disputes*, ⁹*paix*. [For Demonstrative Pronouns, see p. 30.]

EXERCISE XVII.

ÊTRE, to be.

In the two following Exercises the Article is to be omitted before the nouns following Être, to be; and the participles to be treated as adjectives.

To be good. To be bad. To be a painter. Being tired. Not being a-Frenchman.

Present.—I am a baker. She is fanciful. We are not careful enough. They are orphans. He is mad. He is a bachelor. She is wise. She is mad. Is he kind? Is he not a magistrate? That dog is fierce. His look is calm. They are sisters. They are friends. Have (are) they come in? Yes, they have, (have come in.) Are they not gone out? No, they have not, (have not gone out.) They are gone. The performance is over.

Imperfect.—I was there. We were here. They were there. Was she not English? The tree was old. Was the sight fine?

Preterite definite.—I was there. He was hit. We were caught. They were expected. Were they not killed? That battle was fought in . . . He was wounded.

Preterite indefinite.—I have been alarmed. I have not been successful. He has not been heard. Have they been beaten? They have been (*add it.*) Have you been teased? I have not been (*it.*) She has been spoilt. Have you been (*it?*)

EXERCISE XVIII.

Future.—He shall be a soldier. You will never be a barrister. He will never be wise. Will he ever be learned?

We shall be overwhelmed. The town will be invested and besieged. The poor man will be overwhelmed. Will not the place be taken? Will not the garrison be reinforced or surrounded? We shall all be killed, and the crows will be delighted.

Present subjunctive.—I must be* up at six (*six heures.*) Must you not be* up at eight. Do you wish me† to be there? Yes; I wish you to be there. I must be* back soon, so as (*afin de*) to be there (inf.) at nine. I must be near him (*près de lui*) in order that he may be† free from fear (*rassuré.*) I wish them to be well informed. Do you not wish them to be wise? They must not be fools.

EXERCISE XIX.

Imperfect subjunctive.—I had to be up at six. We had to be back at ten. So that they may be successful. So that they should not be unhappy. I did not wish him to be bullied.

Imperative.—Be ready. Do not be astonished. Let him be free. Let her not be surprised. Let us be there. Be easy in mind (*tranquille.*) Don't be so fanciful. Let them be satisfied. Let them not be in too great a hurry. Be good (*sage.*) Let us be quiet.

Let the man read. Do not let the dinner be late. Let the carriage be there. Let the doors be shut. Let the windows be open. Let the affair be put off.

EXERCISE XX.

In the following Exercise the invariable pronoun Ce is used to mean he, she, it, they, and the requisite article is placed before the noun following être.

He is a monster. It is a bore. She is a young lady. It is a church. It is smoke. It is mine.‡ It is the sun. It

* Refer to p. 93.

† Refer to p. 147.

‡ Refer to p. 29.

is the moon. It is the smoke. They are insects. They are friends. They are sisters. They are ours.* They are the stars. They were fishermen. They were soldiers. They were sparks. They were theirs.*

Is he an honest man? Is he a rogue? Is she a work-woman? Is it a chimney? Is it yours?*

It is true. It is false. It is unfortunate. It was splendid.

He is not a soldier. It is not a church. She is not an actress. They are not insects. They are not sisters. They were not fishermen.

Are they not fishes? Are they not cows? Is it not a tree? Is it not silk?

EXERCISE XXI.

ON THE FIRST CONJUGATION.†

Present Indicative.—I remain. I sing this evening. He is dreaming. You do not eat. What are you looking at? What are you looking for? He is swimming. It is floating. What do they want? They do not proceed. We are at work. Do you remain? You do not speak. Are you coming up? They are going in. She is calling you. They are at dinner. They always dine at six (*six heures.*) What do you think of that? We never alter. Does the water flow? Does the wind blow? Are the bells ringing?

Imperfect Tense.—I was going to London. We were living in Paris. Where were you living then? He taught music. I often changed. Did he swear? He never eats meat. They were calling. I breakfasted at ten, and dined at eight. He often repeated that. They were walking down the road (*le long de la route.*) They were saving their strength. Did the wind blow, or was the wind blowing? Used he to dine late? Used the birds to sing?

Preterite definite.—He fell. I attacked him and killed him. We went there. Did you go there? He did not speak. They denied the fact. They did not observe the rules.

* Refer to p. 29.

† Refer to p. 49.

EXERCISE XXII.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Preterite Indefinite.—Use the auxiliary Avoir.—I have forgotten. He has begun. You have failed. We have approved. They have sent. He called. We spoke. They acted.

Use the auxiliary Être.—I fell. He remained. We came in. They came in again. He fell. She remained. I went up.

The governed pronoun to precede the auxiliary (Avoir,) and the participle to agree with it in gender and number.—I found it. We listened to him. They looked for it. I looked at it. We avoided them. They ate it. They have brought it back. Have you begun it? Did he listen? Did not you call? Did not you call me? Did you look at them? Did he ask for me? Did he deceive you? Did they take you in? They did not take me in. Has the coach passed? Did the wind blow? Has the war ceased? The coach has not yet passed. The war has ceased.

Preterpluperfect.—I had hardly finished. He had spoken. You had begun. Had he not looked? We had thought. They had not dined. Had you not left London?

Use être.—They had remained. It had fallen. He had gone up. They had not yet come in. Had they not gone up again?

EXERCISE XXIII.

Future.—I shall amuse them. He will deceive you. I will look for it. She shall inspect it. We shall not approve of it. Will you not look at it? They will keep it. He will reject it. I will call you. I shall go there. We will not go there yet. I will send to ask. He will send it. He will send it us. Will they send the books back? Will your brother call again?

Conditional.—I would play. It would freeze. He would call. We should possess the city. I would take you there. Would you take us there? Would you go with us? They would carry you easily. He would carry his forces over into Italy. She would never deceive you. Would they not explain it to me? Would the man listen to me?

Even if they refused. Even though they should reply. Should they resist, *or* even though they should resist.

EXERCISE XXIV.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.*

Present.—That I give all that! That I hurt my friends! Although he refuse. So that you should not fall. In order that he should not trouble you. Without our speaking. Without your calling. Without their asking. Until they come in again. Without any one finding it again. Without the house falling.

Imperfect.—Whatever I might ask. Whatever you might give. Without her refusing. So that we might not fall. In order that you should not eat it. For them to come up again.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Go, seek, ask, find. Let him speak. Let her not reply. Let us go in. Let us eat. Don't let us go up. Let us not utter a sound. Let them threaten. Sing. Let us sing. Let them judge.

The governed Pronoun to follow the Verb.—Seek him. Ask for it. Speak to me. Show her, (*dat.*) Show it, (*acc.*) Accept us. Let us amuse ourselves. Amuse yourselves. Excuse us. Let us shew them, (*dat.*)

The governed Pronoun to precede the Verb.—Let him seek me. Let her ask for it. Let them speak to us. Let them show it. Let them amuse themselves. Let him speak to her.

* See pp. 147-8.

Do not hurt him. Do not trouble yourselves. Let us not threaten him. Do not vex them, and do not torment us.

Let them not speak to them. Let him not trouble them.

EXERCISE XXV.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Eager to speak. Anxious to dance. Forced to confess. Tired of walking. To be afraid of falling. To be fond of skating.

PARTICIPLES.

Participle present.—On expressing that opinion. On examining that question. In confessing that fault. In coming in again. Whilst (*en*) walking. Whilst talking. Louis going to war. Horses galloping o'er the plain.

As an adjective.—Gurgling streams. A thundering voice. Alarming news. Amusing stories.

Past participle.—*Auxiliary Être: The Participle to agree with the Nominative.*—To be loved. Being detested. To have been deceived. He is vexed. They are tired. It is eaten. The knife asked for. The enchanted flute. An aged person. The condemned (prisoner.) It will be torn. She will be astonished. Some will be praised; others will be blamed.

To have arrived. They have arrived. To have entered. She has entered. To have fallen. It has fallen. Having arrived there, he. Having arrived there, we. A stone, which had fallen from the house.

EXERCISE XXVI.

Auxiliary Avoir: The Participle not to agree.—To have asked. We have asked. To have judged. They have

judged. To have finished. She has finished. To have coughed. Did he cough. They caught the thief. He swallowed that hoax. She would have listened.

Let the participle agree with the pronoun preceding the auxiliary in the French.—I observed it. We observed it. He asked for it. He asked for them. We have invited her. She has invited them. The things which he has found.

On the Verb LAISSER.

Laisser, to leave, to let, to allow, governs an infinitive : this infinitive may have an active or a passive signification.

To allow some one to pass, *laisser passer quelqu'un*.

To allow some one to be killed, *laisser tuer quelqu'un*.

Do not let him pass, *ne le laissez pas passer*.

Do not let him be killed, *ne le laissez pas tuer*.

Do not let yourself be deceived. I will not let you fall. I will not let you be forgotten. He will not let himself be found.

EXERCISE XXVII.

PRONOMINAL, OR REFLECTIVE VERBS.

First Conjugation.—*Accidence*, p. 54.

Present Indicative.—I am lying down. I go to bed at ten. He is getting up. He rises at six. You fancy it. We give ourselves much trouble. You do not make haste enough. They are interested in it, (*y.*) I do not go to bed so soon. He never rises till ten. I find it awfully slow, or I am frightfully dull. We do not give ourselves much trouble. They are not so easily satisfied. I am well. At what time do you go to bed? Why do you not make haste? When does he rise? Does he give himself much trouble? Does your brother give himself much trouble? Does the servant go to bed early? How are you?

Imperfect.—I was bathing. You were wrong, (*sing.*) He was taking a walk. We were enjoying ourselves. You were bathing. They were mistaken. Did he often bathe? Never. He was well.

Preterite definite.—I went away. You went away. He went away. We went away. You went away. They went away. We did not go away. They did not go away. Did you go away? He threw himself into his arms. He was (found himself) there by chance.

Preterite indefinite.—I enjoyed myself famously. You forgot yourself, (*sing.*) He has killed himself. We have been very dull. We took a walk in the garden. You have made some mistake. They have got up. They have killed one another. They met in Paris. They did not bow to one another. They did not embrace. I think I have made a mistake.

EXERCISE XXVIII.

I repeated it to myself. I did not remember it. She repeated it often to herself. She did not remember it. She remembered it. Has she taken a walk? Did she remember it? He has not been well. How did you get there? How did he get that? How did the children enjoy themselves? Why did he not go immediately to the spot? But how did the boots get there? How has your sister been all the time?

Preterpluperfect.—He had not been well. He had got himself none of the things necessary. He had made a mistake. Had she not deceived herself? She had been at that *fête*. They had not enjoyed themselves. Had he not gone to bed very late? Had not the Confederate army retired? and had not the Federals advanced? He had had a dull time of it there apparently (had been dull.) We had had our walk. Had you not made a mistake?

Future.—I shall apply to him. Will you be satisfied with that? You will have plenty of fun there. We will behave properly. He will kill himself. Shall we rest? Will not the spots go away? Will the enemy declare himself? Will not that animal take refuge in our swamp?

Conditional.—I would not trust him, (*à lui.*) Would you get up ? (*s.*) He would cry out. We would be most ready to oblige you. You would make a mistake. They would be better in the country.

Subjunctive present.—Provided I make haste. So that you may enjoy yourself, *s.* Without his suspecting it. Without our suspecting it. Without your suspecting it. Without their suspecting it. Without any one being there. Without the man making haste.

Imperfect subjunctive.—Without my deceiving myself. Without his making a mistake. Without our finding ourselves there. Without their getting up.

Imperative.—Rise. Do not rest. Let him rest. Let him not rise. Let us make ourselves comfortable. Let us not deceive ourselves. Hasten. Do not make a mistake. Let them make haste. Let them not get confused. Do not get confused. Compose yourself.

Exercises on verbs in IR.

Give the English participle and first singular of present and perfect tenses of the following Verbs in French.

Finir ; agir ; avertir ; obéir ; désobéir ; réunir ; réussir ; bâtir ; jouir ; se réjouir. Page 66.

Sentir ; partir ; sortir ; dormir ; servir ; se servir ; se repentir. Page 68.

Offrir ; souffrir ; ouvrir ; couvrir. Page 75.

Venir ; tenir. Page 71.

Acquérir ; conquérir.

Courir ; concourir ; accourir ; secourir. Page 74.

Mourir. Page 77.

Cueillir ; accueillir. Page 72.

Indicative Present.

Finir, agir, &c. p. 66.—I shudder when I think of it. I warn you of it. What do you feed on? He is growing. He punishes the innocent (*pl.*) instead of the guilty, (*pl.*) Does he obey you? I hate hypocrisy. We hate falsehood. You disobey him, (*dat.*) Soldiers obey officers. Officers obey the general. The general obeys the commander-in-chief. Those villains always betray their own side. You grow pale. They never succeed. Do not those colours answer? Their engineers are building a fort. Monkeys hate fleas. Why do not those people unite their efforts.

Sentir, partir, &c. p. 68.—I am off. When do you go? Does not the coach start soon? He is asleep. He is falling asleep. What is the use of that, (*or to what does that serve?*) What is the use of honour without money? We repent. We start to-morrow morning at seven o'clock. You are asleep. Do you not smell fire? They serve a foreign master. In what country do not the poor serve the rich? Patriots serve their country. They use one room. What grammar do your boys use?

Offrir, souffrir, &c. p. 75.—I offer you my heart and my umbrella. Do you suffer much? She does not suffer at all. He puts his hat on (*or covers himself,*) His cloak covers him. We are discovering something. How much do you offer? How do those boxes open? At what time do the doors open? Men and beasts cover the earth. You offer too much for it, (*of it.*)

Venir, tenir, &c. p. 71.—I maintain that. I warn you of it. The king keeps a large army. What becomes of him? What becomes of the smoke? Do not caterpillars become butterflies? Some do. He is becoming wiser. Cotton is becoming very scarce. I think he is going mad. What have you got in your hand? (*or do you hold in your hand?*) The wind comes from the east. He is coming at twelve. The postman comes at twelve. Does this colour suit? We come back at five. Do you still maintain the same opinion? Are not those ladies coming back again? The cows come back to the shed every evening from the meadow.

I remember your words. Do you remember that evening? It stands (holds itself up) alone. We remember it. Do you remember me,—him,—them,—us? * The poor boy did not remember the passage. They stand (hold themselves) near one another. Do not those gentlemen remember having seen me?

Venir, &c. followed by an infinitive.—To have just arrived. I have just arrived. She has just found her umbrella. The hour has just struck. Has it not struck twelve? Has it not just struck three? (have not three hours just struck?) We have just come in. Have you not been singing? The confederates have just won another great victory. Their best general has just died.

Acquerir, conquerir.—I am acquiring strength. We are acquiring new friends. They are every day conquering new territory.

Cueillir, accueillir.—I am collecting phrases. She is picking flowers. He collects his thoughts. They welcome and *fête* you (one welcomes, &c.)

Mourir.—I am dying of thirst. The swan dies singing. We die avenged. You are dying of dulness here. They die, but their names do not die.

Courir.—I go over the same ground every day. Why do you run? He is always on the move (runs always.) I hasten (run) to obey you. The wave flows onward (runs up.) I am in for, I am trying for, a scholarship. Are you going to try? (do you go in?) Are your pupils trying? Prince, whither are you hurrying (where do you run?) When I call them they all come rushing up (run up.) Come along all of you (run up all.) The boys are looking over their lessons.

* *De moi, de lui, d'eux, de nous?* The personal pronouns relating to persons are not governed by reflective verbs. The disjunctive or absolute form of pronoun is used with a preposition.

All.—He enjoys a large fortune. He has long enjoyed a good fortune (enjoys since a long time.) He is in my service (he serves me.) He has been three years in my service (serves me since three years.) How long have you held that opinion? (since how long do you hold that opinion?) How long has that child been asleep?

Imperfect.

Finir, agir, &c.—I was enjoying my happiness. He was growing weaker every day. We were scaling the mountains. He was clearing every obstacle. That sight amused them immensely. The women applauded. Our ancestors used to feed on acorns. Why did the trees quiver, and why did the cattle moan like that?

Sentir, &c. venir, &c. souffrir, &c. courir, &c.—I felt ill (*reflect.*) He was asleep. How much did he offer for it? He did not allow the grass to grow (did not fall asleep, *reflect.*) The people (sing.) suffered. Where was that vessel coming from? It was coming back from India. What did you suffer from? I did not remember his name. The poor man was holding up the whole weight of the ladder. Where were you running to? Where were all those people (was all that world) running to? The others were not giving way (were standing firm.)

Venir.—I had just left her. Had you not just spoken? Mrs. P. had just been singing. The Queen had just passed. Had not the troops just come back from the Crimea? The swallows had just made their appearance. Napoleon had just died.

I had been running for an hour (I ran since an hour.) The poor man had been suffering for years (suffered since years.) We had not been asleep for more than ten minutes (we slept since ten minutes hardly.)

EXERCISE XXIX.

Preterite definite.

Finir, &c. offrir, &c. sentir, &c. cueillir, &c.—He warned me of it. I warned them of it. It (that) succeeded capitally. The general acted rashly. We felt hurt (*reflect.*) Did you offer enough? The woods resounded with his cries. Did not your men cover themselves with glory?

Acquérir, &c.—I acquired their esteem. Alexander conquered Persia. Cæsar conquered Gaul. We required the interference of the law. You acquired great possessions. Did not the Romans conquer all Italy?

Courir, mourir.—I ran to meet him (*au devant de lui.*) The dog ran to meet me (*au devant de moi.*) We helped him as well as we could (*de notre mieux.*) He ran up immediately. *They** all competed. Prince Eugene hastened (ran) to meet him. He died that year. Fifty of our men died of cholera. Pompey died in sight of Egypt.

Venir.—I came to London in 1793. He remembered me. Did not the fleet come back. He held me back. We came, he came, they came. We held, you held, they held. The emigrants came back at the restoration.

EXERCISE XXX.

Preterite indefinite.

I warned the regiment. I felt nothing. He collected all his friends. Has your son been successful? Did you sleep well? We did not sleep at all. Have they acted properly? We enjoyed your society. They served us well. Has your father consented? Yes; but the others have not consented to it.

Reflective.—I repented my words. I did not repent them. Didst thou not use my things? No; I did not use them. He has retired to Paris. We long felt the effects of that misfortune. She has fainted away. The child fell asleep.

* The words in the text printed in italics are to be omitted in translation.

They fell asleep. He and I used them. I remembered your commission. I did not remember. Did he not remember that? Edward III. lay dormant in the midst of prosperity.

Être auxiliary.—I went away yesterday. When did you go out? Has not that man gone away again? My sister has gone. He and I came out again directly. Why did you not come? I did come. That day Augustus went away, and never came back again. Did you come to my house? Did not the troops come back yesterday? Did Frederick come with them? The emperor has returned from Vichy. Has the emperor returned from Vichy? That little child has become a tall man. He died revenged. How many great men have been (died) assassinated!

Napoleon ended his days in exile. Duroc Lannes perished on the field of battle. Ney, Murat, were (died) executed. All the honour of that action reflected upon you. He consented, but I think he has since reflected.

EXERCISE XXXI.

Future.

Finir, &c. sentir, &c. offrir, &c.—I shall finish my work, and I shall start directly afterwards. Will you allow that? Fancy! soon that ivy will cover this side of the house. Shall we act so, or otherwise? I will warn you in good time. He will never finish. Will they never have done (finish)? They will not open the doors to us. They (*sing.*) will not open the doors till six o'clock. Will all those horses start at once? The campaign will probably open (*reflec.*) by an attack on Martinsburg. That will answer the purpose (serve) of a banner.

Tenir, venir.—I will come and fetch you (*inf.*) You will return directly. He will remember the lesson. I shall remember that. She will remember you, me, them. She will remember it. Will she? Those pillars will support the gallery. Those papers will belong to you at my death.

Courir, mourir.—I will have recourse to armed force. He will not die yet, I can tell you (*allez.*) We shall go over Scotland next summer. We will discourse about his plans. Your men will die in that hot country.

Acquérir, enquerir.—He will soon acquire great glory, (*indefinite article.*)

Cueillir.—I will gather a bouquet for you. My father will receive you with open arms, (*à bras ouverts.*) Their foot-soldiers (*fantassins*) will receive you with musket shots, (*à coups defusil.*)

Conditional.

I would warn you. He would clear that in one bound. Would you feed me? No; you should feed yourself (*reflect.*) These men would never obey you. They would never keep their promises. He would keep you talking (entertain you) a whole hour. He would acquire a very pure accent in Paris. The enemy would reconquer all their advantages.

Even if (*quand même*) he did keep me talking one hour, I should not feel (*reflec.*) tired. Those wretches would betray you. If (*quand*) they did betray me, I would still make use of them. He would run all day without fatiguing himself. He would not be fatigued (fatigue himself) even if he ran all day.

EXERCISE XXXII.

Subjunctive present.

Finir, agir, &c.—In whatever way (*de quelque manière que*) I act, I am blamed. I do not think that he will disobey you. Do you think that they will obey me? He wishes us to succeed. I wish you to succeed. We wish them to enjoy themselves. We tremble lest those two corps should meet together.

Sentir, partir, servir, &c.—Let me feel you. Let me help you. I do not go without his consenting. Without your father's consenting. So that he may start, I wish you to go out. We wish them to go. They wish us to use our dictionary.

Venir, tenir.—Call him, for him to come back again (so that he come back again.) I do not think he will come back. I will walk without his holding me. Although all belongs to you. I do not think that that falls to my share (returns to me.) He wishes us to return early. So that you may remember it (*en*.) I do not think those books will suit you.

EXERCISE XXXIII.

Offrir, souffrir, couvrir, &c.—He knocks for me to open. Without his offering it me. Whatever he may be suffering. I do not wish you to suffer (desire that you should suffer.) Do you wish me to cover the table (desire that I cover ?) It is too soon for them to open the doors (for that they open.)

Acquérir, conquérir.—In order that I may acquire a pure accent. Although he conquered kingdoms. By whatever means they acquire their possessions.

Cueillir.—Let me gather that rose for you (that I gather that rose for you.) Do you wish me to gather a bouquet for her (to her ?) We die, in order that our comrades may gather laurels.

Mourir.—Do you wish me to die ? No ; I do not wish you to die. I wish rather that you should not die. We poison them, so that they should die and not torment us any longer. That we should die then !

Courir.—Where do you wish me to run ? I do not wish her to run and over-heat herself (that she should run and that she should over-heat herself.) Do you wish us to try for that prize. I wish you to try, but I do not wish Fuscus, Faber, and Bobides to compete.

EXERCISE XXXIV.

Imperfect subjunctive.

I wished him to finish it. He wished me to act otherwise. I called (*pret. indef.*) for them to warn you.

I would not scream, whatever I might feel. She would not scream, whatever she might feel. He never came without our immediately going away.

He sent it me, so that I should offer it to you. I send it to him, for him to offer it to you.

Did you not wish me to come (wish that I should come ?) I did not think they would come back so soon.

I encouraged military tastes in him, so that he should acquire fame and gather laurels.

EXERCISE XXXV.

Imperative.

OBSERVE : Pronouns personal, governed by verbs in the imperative second singular, first and second plural used affirmatively, are placed contrary to the rule, after the verb. The third persons imperative, and the negative form of either person, take the pronouns before them according to the general rule.

Finir, &c.—Finish. Finish it. Do not finish it ? Let us build. Let us build it. Let us not build it. Let us join them together. Let us not join them together. Let us join together (*reflec.*) Divert yourselves. Do not divert yourselves at my expense. Warn your friends. Do not warn your enemies. Let him obey us. Let him not disobey them. Let them build no more houses.

Sentir, &c.—Do not go yet. Go out now. Let them serve us better than that. Yes ; serve us better than that. Help yourselves. No ; you help us. Let us start at once. Let us not fall asleep. Let us sleep. Start again. Repent. Use my books. Do not use that knife. Let them use my name.

Souffrir, &c.—Cover the walls. Do not allow those interruptions. Cover them. Do not allow it. Allow it this time. Let him offer more. Open the door. Let us offer more than that. Let the doors open (*reflective.*) Let the servants open the windows.

EXERCISE XXXVI.

Venir, tenir.—Come, *s. little one (petit.)* Look, *s.* (hold.) Let him hold the branch. Let him come back immediately. Let us agree to (*de*) a plan. Come back. Let us become wiser. Hold (*pl.*) him up. Detain (*pl.*) him. Do not hold (*pl.*) him up. Do not detain (*pl.*) him. Do not own it. Let us maintain it. Let us not maintain it. Let him own it. Let them own it, or let them disown it. Let them not return to it any more. Come and take it, (come to take it.) Come back for it, (come back to fetch it.) Hold yourself up. Remember (*reft.*) Remember (*reft.*) my words. Let him remember that. Let us abstain from all work. Remember me. Let them remember it. Let all remember to bring their books.

Courir.—Run. Run and fetch the doctor, (run to seek.) Let him run and get (to fetch, seek,) his dictionary. Let us run and get it. Run and fetch them. Let us help them. Help me. Let them help us. Let every one hasten here. Let all try.

Mourir.—Die rather. Let us die for our country. Let us not die yet. Let him die. Let no one die. Let all the rats, all the pigs, and all the spiders die.

EXERCISE XXXVII.

Verbs in OIR.

Give the English and participles of Avoir, *p.* 33; Recevoir, devoir, apercevoir, *p.* 79; Voir, pouvoir, mouvoir, *p.* 87; Valoir, *p.* 83; Savoir, *p.* 91; Pouvoir, *p.* 88; Vouloir, *p.* 85; Asseoir, *p.* 81; Falloir, *p.* 93.

Recevoir, &c. page 79.—Madame A. receives (company) every Friday, (all the Fridays.) Does not the Préfet receive on Tuesdays, (the Tuesdays)? Sir, I perceive a fly upon your hat. I cannot understand (I do not conceive) that impatience. Do you see any one to day, Sir? (Does Monsieur receive to day?) What's that you can see yonder? (what

does one perceive yonder)? I owe nothing, (*pl.*) How much does he owe you? You owe me a shilling. Those people owe money to everybody. This praise is due to him, (one owes him this praise.) What do they not owe to your kindness?

Devoir, as an auxiliary, to be to, to have to, ought.—When am I to come back, (when owe I to return)? The prince is to arrive at three o'clock, (owes to arrive.) Are you not to sup with us this evening? They are soon to leave.

Voir, revoir, pouvoir, p. 87.—What do I see? At last I see you again. I foresee misfortunes. Does he see us? He does not see us yet. We see nothing from here. If you see them again, do not forget my commission. Do you see me from there? As soon as their scouts see us..... I provide for the needs of all. Flowers provide for the wants of bees. You foresee misfortunes from a distance.

EXERCISE XXXVIII.

Valoir, to be worth, page 83.—I am worth ten thousand pence. What is he worth a year? What is that horse worth? It is worth perhaps £150. I think that mine are as good as yours. They are a match for you, (they are worth you.) It is not worth it. It (*cela*) is not worth while, (worth the trouble of it.)

Savoir, to know, to know how, page 91.—I know that he came, (*pret. indef.*) How do you know it? We know all that. Well, what does he know? He knows English and French history. Does he know Latin and Greek? He only knows a little Latin. That man knows everything. We know all. Dogs know when people like them, (one likes them.) Is dinner ready? I do not know. Do you know what time (hour) it is. Does he know, do they know, does your friend, do your friends know how to swim?

Pouvoir, to be able, page 88: *Je peux*, I can, I may, I am able, (*to govern an infinitive.*)—I can go there now. He may hurt us. I can send you away. That affair may take a bad

turn, (turn badly.) The thing cannot fail. It (that) may fall. We can abolish it. Can you (can you it) ? We can do everything, (we can everything.) What can they do, (what can they) ? They can do everything, (they can everything.) I cannot. He can (add it.) Can you come with me ? Can you ask it ? Why not ?

EXERCISE XXXIX.

Vouloir, to wish to have.—Will you have some coffee, (will you some coffee) ? Yes ; if you please, (yes ; I wish it well.) Will you have some asparagus, (will you some asparagus) ? Glad of some (willingly) No ; we do not want any, (no ; we do not wish of it.)

Vouloir, to wish, to want, to will, *governs infinitives or subjunctives*.—*Infinitive*.—I wish to look at it. Does he wish to speak to me ? Does your father want to speak to me ? Yes ; my father wishes to speak to you. We want to pay and go. We do not wish to remain here. Those gentlemen insist on taking you with them, (wish absolutely to take you away.) Do you wish to dine, gentlemen, (do those gentlemen wish to dine) ? Yes, we do, (yes, we wish it.) Will you go with me ? Yes, we will, (add it.) I insist on it, (I wish it.) I wont, (I will not.)

Vouloir with subjunctive, page 86.—I wish him to listen, (that he listen.) At what time do you wish the troops to arrive ? We wish dinner to be ready at six punctually. We wish him to be pardoned. Would you have his valet go on foot ?

Falloir, *impersonal*, to be necessary, to be wanting, p. 93 : *Il faut*, that wants, there is wanting, or wanted ; *il me faut*, I want, there is wanting to me ; *il lui faut*, he wants ; *lui faut-il* ? does he want ? *il nous faut*, we want ; *il ne nous faut pas*, we do not want, &c.—This is wanting, (or there is wanting this.) We want that, (or there is wanting that to us.) What is wanted ? We want a man, (or there wants a man to us.) We want all that, (or there wants all that to us.) Do

you want money? (*or* wants there money to you?) They want nothing more, (*or* there wants nothing more to them.) That is all they want, (*or* there wants but that to them.) We want some, (*or* there wants of it to us.) They want it, (*or* there wants it to them.) Do they not want reinforcements? Yes; they want reinforcements of men and provisions.

Il faut, it is necessary, *with an infinitive*.—We must die, (it is necessary to die.) You must run, (it is necessary to run.) You must drive away those thoughts. We or you must not forget it. Must not we shout aloud? Had I better buy it, (must I, is it necessary?) Must I speak? No; you must hold your tongue, (*reflec.**) We must make haste, (*reflec.**) You must call out the soldiery and collect the volunteers. You must not be angry, (*reflec.**)

EXERCISE XL.

Falloir, to be necessary, *with subjunctive, &c.* page 93.—He must come in time, (it is necessary that he come in time.) He must not bring his dog with him, (it is not necessary that he bring.) His keeper must come with him. The army must be fed. That young man must not be angry, (*reflec.*) (*or* it is not necessary that that young man anger himself.) The sinner must repent, (*reflec.*) The dinner must not get cold, (*reflec.*) I am busy: they must come again next week. Must not they finish the work begun? Must not the work be finished? (*reflec.* finish itself.) Where must he run? Why must that poor man die? He must die for having (*inf.*) forgotten to salute the queen's parrot, (parrot of the queen.) The walls of the house must be white, and the doors and windows green. Your exercise must be finished by six o'clock. The boats must not leave that place. The blinds must be down. Those things must not stay there.

* Suit the pronoun to the person and number with the infinitive, as with any other part of a reflective verb: thus, *il faut nous arrêter*, we must stop.

EXERCISE XLI.

Asseoir, to seat, more frequently used in its reflective form of *s'asseoir*, to sit down.—I take my seat (I sit,) and he begins. Here is where (it is here that) I sit generally. We sometimes sit on the grass. They sit all round me. Why do you not sit down? Where does he sit? Do they always stand? (are they always up?) do they never sit?

Imperfect.

Recevoir, &c. *voir*, *avoir*, *valoir*, *savoir*, *s'asseoir*, *vouloir*.—I perceived (*reflec.*) his evil intention. I had an uncle who always* received me when I went to London. They had not yet finished. Did they ask you anything more, (*encore quelque chose?*) We perceived their watch-fires among the bushes. You owed them (*dat.*) more respect. He always sat there, (*reflec.*) I used to see them from time to time. Whom used you to see there? He foresaw everything, and provided accordingly. They foresaw nothing. I could see them, (saw them) in the distance. I knew it. I did not know it. What! you did not know that? They knew all the names of all the birds and of all the flowers. I thought he knew nothing. Yes; he knows *how* to swim. Oh! if that is all he knows (if he knows but that.) If you *only* knew what I suffer. One was as good as the other (was worth the other.) Our peaches were not so good as his.

EXERCISE XLII.

I wished to go, but they detained me, (*pret. indef.*) Would he not obey you? No; he would not (it.) They wanted to deceive us. We would not listen to them.

Devoir, *aux.*—One of her sisters, lately married, was *expected* to meet her there. The two friends were to perform that journey, and return that day year (in a year day for day.)

* Adverbs are to be placed after the verb, or before the nominative to the verb, but never between them, in French.

A ministry in which the spirit of government was to overrule party spirit. She was to learn *Athalie* by heart, or pay two guineas. *As a boy*, he announced what (*ce que*) he was to be as a man.

Vouloir, with the imperfect subjunctive.—We did not wish him to disturb you. They did not wish the property to be sold. Did you not wish peace to be made? No; I wanted the war to continue.

Pouvoir, (could, could have, might, might have, was able,) with infinitive.—I could *do* nothing. What could I do? You could have hindered them. He might have done us an injury. Might they not have surprised you? The enemy might have come: we were quite unprepared.

EXERCISE XLIII.

Falloir, with infinitive.—You ought to have bought a boat, (it was necessary to buy.) I had to make up my mind, (*reflec.*) (it was necessary to decide myself.) What was to be brought (was it necessary to bring?) She had to be carried away, (it was necessary to carry her away.) You should not have brought him, (it was not necessary to bring him.) Ought I to have sent him away, (was it necessary to send him away?)

Falloir, with imperfect subjunctive.—He had to attend to his business, (it was necessary that he should attend to, occupy himself about.) They should not have built so near us, (it was not necessary that they should build.) The river was forced to go under the bridge, (it was necessary that the river should pass.) That man ought not to have come here, (it was not necessary that that man should come.)

EXERCISE XLIV.

Preterite definite.

Devoir, recevoir, apercevoir, s'apercevoir de, valoir, vouloir, pouvoir, pourvoir à, savoir.—He received me with open arms (the arms open.) We did not perceive him. They perceived me from afar. The poor girl did not perceive (*refl.*)

a branch at her feet. The king felt (conceived) great sadness in consequence, (*en*.) The messenger had (owed) to start off again instantly. That action won him (was worth to him) his commission (his epaulettes.) I wished to stop him. The queen chose (wished) to accompany him in this expedition. Two of our squadrons would (wished to) follow the fugitives. We would not *have* it (of it.) Why would you not *have* it (of it?) Why would not the others *have* it (of it?) Mrs. Boniface provided for all our needs. I was at last able to get out. At last they were able to perceive us. We were powerless (could nothing.) She found the way (knew how) to please me. Edward was clever enough (knew how) to secure resources in the country. He contrived (knew how) to get some friends.

EXERCISE XLV.

Voir, entrevoir, prévoir.—I saw him. We foresaw it. I caught a glimpse of them. We saw him again two years afterwards. How did you not foresee that accident? They did not see us come in. The soldiers saw him, and declared themselves for him immediately.

S'asseoir.—I sat down at the same time he did, (*en même temps que lui*.) We all sat. The king sat down again, after having surveyed the court, the soldiers, and the crowd of spectators, (*après avoir promené un regard sur le tribunal, sur les soldats, et sur la foule des assistants*.)

Falloir, with infinitive.—I had to receive him. I had to answer every question, (*répondre à toutes les questions*.)

EXERCISE XLVI.

Compound tenses.—Preterite indefinite.

Recevoir, concevoir, apercevoir, devoir, s'apercevoir.—I have not received any notice. Have you received your pay? No; I have not received it. I perceived a little hole in the cloth. I did not perceive it. He conceived a great dislike for me. Has the parcel come? We have not received it yet.

Devoir, aux.—I have had to announce it to them. We had to start very early. They must have paid dearly *for* it. Those people must have perceived a great change.

S'apercevoir de, (reflec.)—I perceived my mistake directly. Did they (*on*, sing.) perceive her emotion? No; no one perceived it. We perceived nothing. Did your enemies perceive your intention?

EXERCISE XLVII.

Vouloir.—I would not stop him. Why would not you stop him? Would not he stop (*reflec.*)? I invited them, and they would not come. Why would not your friend come in? I don't know. They all asked to go to the play, and I would not allow it (I have not wished it.)

Pouvoir.—I was able to secure that situation for him (*dat.*) I could not induce them to join us, (*se joindre à nous.*) We could *do* nothing for you. Was your carriage able to get through there? No, it could not get through. Has not the boat been able to get into the harbour? Hardly. Have not the *contending parties* (*combattants*) been able to meet? (*reflec.*)

Savoir.—How did you learn that? I knew it by the newspaper. I never did know how to play at whist. They never could manage (never have known how) to please me. That man never knew more than three things in his life.

EXERCISE XLVIII.

Falloir, il a fallu, with infinitive.—We have had to tell it him, (*le lui dire.*) Have we not been obliged to sell the very shirts off our backs, (*vendre jusqu' à nos chemises.*) Did it require much begging for, (*beaucoup solliciter*)? What did it require (what was requisite)? It only required a little civility.

Voir, &c.—I saw him (*or have seen him*) I saw it. We saw them. Did you see them? We saw him, and no more,

(*voilà tout.*) They saw us. My father has seen to (has foreseen) all that. What (that which) I have seen is useful. All the people we have seen are foreigners. The man I saw pass (whom I have seen to pass.) Twice my eyes have seen the same figure. I did not see them: did you? (and you?) Who saw him come (to come)?

EXERCISE XLIX.

S'asseoir, (reflect.)—I sat down. Did she sit down? Did she not sit down? Where did you sit? I sat under this tree, there, in the shade.

Avoir.—What was the matter with you (what did you have)? I have had the measles, and she has had the whooping-cough. You have had it, *m.* You have had them, *m.* What did you have? Oh! we had all kinds of amusements.

Vouloir.—I wanted to see you. You wanted to murder me.

Valoir.—That property was once worth ten thousand pounds. An action that got him his commission (was worth to him.)

Preterpluperfect.

All.—If I had had my gun! Will you give me my week's allowance? I thought (*je croyais que*) you had had it. I had sat down in his arm-chair. If it had been necessary to speak. I had seen the storm coming (to come the storm.) I had not received my appointment. The little girl had already perceived me. Those good people had perceived (*reflec.*) my difficulty.

EXERCISE L.

Future.

Devoir, recevoir, apercevoir, s'apercevoir, &c. &c.—I shall probably receive some money to-morrow; then I shall owe nothing more. I will warn you when I perceive (*fut.*) them

coming (*inf.*) By and bye we shall see nothing. They will only receive three sous each. When will Alexander get my letter? He will not receive it for a month (he will receive it only in a month.) Do not leave any mistakes: Mr. G. is sure to perceive them (will perceive (*reflec.*) them for certain.)

Voir, prévoir, revoir.—When* I see him, I will remind him of it, (*je le lui rappellerai.*) He will never see you again. When shall we see you again? Shall we not see them again? When that poor man sees his home again (*son pays,*) he will go mad with joy (*il deviendra fou de joie.*)

Pourvoir.—I will see to it (will provide for it, *y.*) Who will supply all your wants?

EXERCISE LI.

Vouloir.—He will never wish to come back again. Those cheats will try (will wish) to take you in. Who will consent (wish) to accept her?

Valoir, revaloir.—In three years your land will be worth ten times its present value. Then the poor old horse will be good for nothing (be worth nothing.) I will pay you out again (I will be worth it to you again.)

Falloir.—We shall have to kill you (it will be necessary to.) What shall I have to do (what will it be necessary to do)? You will have to beg for the support of all these people, (*solliciter l'appui de tout ce monde.*)

EXERCISE LII.

S'asseoir.—Thank you, I will not sit down. He will sit down when he is tired (shall be tired.) Will not the president soon sit down? This time the commoners will sit when the clergy do (will sit.)

* The verb is to be in the future after *quand*, when, if a future time is implied.

EXERCISE LIII.

Conditional.

Avoir.—I should never have thought. . . . He would have plenty of amusement, (*assez de divertissement*) there. They would have a great deal of trouble, (*beaucoup de peine*.) Should we have food and lodging? I think I should do well (be right, have reason) to undertake it, (*de m'en charger*.) On the contrary, you would be wrong. I should have wished it. I should have liked (wished) to see him.

Recevoir.—I would receive the unfortunate man, if he came here. Would you receive him? You would soon perceive it (*reflec.*) if he were guilty. In a very few months (*en très peu de mois*) he would owe three or four hundred pounds.

EXERCISE LIV.

Devoir, as auxiliary, with infinitive, ought to, should.—I ought to let you know (*vous avertir*) that he is very deaf. He ought to know more than that. Children should not disobey their parents. You ought to be more forward than that, (*plus fort que cela*.) Ought we not to make haste? (*reflec.* hasten ourselves.)

Voir.—I would behold a ghost, a phantom, a spirit, an ogre, or a monster, with perfect composure (*sans m'émouvoir*,) so calm and unexcitable have I become, (*tant je suis devenu impassible*.) What should we see there? Men and women like ourselves. People (*on*, sing.) would see you. They would not see us.

EXERCISE LV.

Pouvoir, with infinitive.—It (*cela*) might fall (would be able to fall.) What could he do? I might make a mistake (deceive myself.) They might make a mistake. Could not you come directly? Might not those boxes fall? That individual might be rather inconvenient to us, (*nous gêner*.)

Valoir.—It would be better (be worth better) to start at once. Would it not be better *to put it off (le remettre)* ? One (*l'un*) would be as good as the other (would be worth the other.)

Falloir.—We should have (it would be necessary) *to give it back again (le rendre)*. What should we have to do (would it be necessary to do) ? It would not do to speak to him about it (it would not be necessary to, &c.) Would not they have to (would it not be necessary to) invite them (that they should invite them) ?

EXERCISE LVI.

Past conditional, or compound conditional. The conditional of Avoir, with the past participle of the verb in use : as—

I should have been able,	<i>J'aurais pu.</i>
you would have wished,	<i>vous auriez voulu.</i>
it would have been necessary,	<i>il aurait fallu.</i>
we would have received you,	<i>nous vous aurions reçus.</i>
what would you have seen ?	<i>qu'auriez vous vu ?</i>
they would have had some	<i>ils auraient eu de la peine.</i>
I ought to have... [trouble,	<i>j'aurais dû.....</i>
I ought to have remembered it,	<i>j'aurais dû m'en souvenir.</i>
you ought to have spoken to them,	<i>tu aurais dû leur parler.</i>

He ought to have looked for it. Ought he not to have finished it ? We ought to have remained. They ought to have hidden their intentions.

EXERCISE LVII.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present, (refer to pp. 93, 147, 148.)

Recevoir, devoir, &c.—Come in without my perceiving you. He loves you but little (*il vous aime médiocrement*), though he receives you well. Drop it (*laissez-le tomber*) so that I may catch it (receive it) in my hat. Do you wish me to receive blows in (*à*) your place (do you wish that I should receive ?) I must (*il faut que je*) receive their letters. She must receive her company in town (*à la ville*.)

Voir.—Whom must I see (is it necessary that I see)? We must see all that. He must not see us. Without my seeing you. So that we may see him. I wish him to see Paris, Vienna, Florence, Genoa, Rome, and Naples. Do you wish us to see them again? I hear you (*je vous entends*) although I do not see you.

Pouvoir.—Come nearer (*rapprochez-vous*), so that I may touch you. Speak so that we can hear you (*vous entendre*.) Whatever I may be able to do.

EXERCISE LVIII.

Imperfect.

Recevoir, &c.—I did not hope that he would receive us so well. He came in without our perceiving him. She would not have us receive presents (did not wish that we should.) *We entered the house* (*nous pénétrâmes dans la maison*) without his perceiving us.

Voir.—He did not wish me to see you (that I should see you.) He ought not to have seen you (it was not necessary, *il ne fallait pas*, that he should see you.) Whatever you might have seen, *you ought not to have mentioned it* (*il ne fallait pas souffler mot*.)

EXERCISE LIX.

Pouvoir.—I did not think that you could come. For them to be able to (for that they might be able to) catch the train, *they should have started at a quarter past three* (*il leur aurait fallu partir à trois heures un quart*.)

Vouloir.—Whatever I might wish to do. Did you think that he would betray us (*nous trahir*)? Whatever those gentlemen wished to undertake, *they ought not to have used our money* (*ils n'auraient pas dû se servir de notre argent*.)

EXERCISE LX.

Imperative.

Recevoir, devoir, s'apercevoir de, &c.—Receive the consulship for the next year. Owe nothing to any one (*à personne.*) Let him owe nothing to any one. Let us receive every one (*tout le monde.*) Do not receive every one in your house in that way (*chez vous comme cela.*) Receive him, us, them. Do not receive him, us, them. Let him receive them. Let him perceive it, (*reflec.*) Let us receive her. Receive him. Let us not receive her. Do not receive him. Let the sheath receive the sword. Let the men receive their pay. Let them not receive it.

Voir, prévoir, pourvoir.—See that (*sing.*) See him (*pl.*) See nothing (*sing.*) See no one (*pl.*) Let him see his doctor. Let his doctor see him. Let us see nobody. Do not let them see us. Let us provide against (*à*) everything.

Infinitive.

All.—Without perceiving us. To (*pour*) receive him. Without wishing it. So as to (*afin de*) see them. Anxious to receive his orders. Impatient to receive an answer. He ended (*il finit*) by wishing to stay with us. I punish him (*je le punis*) for having made a noise (*fait du bruit.*)

You are blamed (*on vous blâme*) for having done too much (*trop fait.*)

Participles.

Present, all.—Perceiving you in the crowd, I wished to get near you (*j'ai voulu vous approcher.*) On seeing him, confidence returned to me (*la confiance m' est revenu.*) Having to (owing to) go to their house (*me rendre chez eux.*) Wishing to see England.

Past.—He has been seen. It has been received. Who has been seen? What has been received? The news has been received. The balloon has been seen. Those honours are due to him. That consideration is due to them.

EXERCISE LXI.

Verbs in RE.

The class *rendre, vendre, &c.* (p. 94,) throughout ;

<i>Rendre</i> , to render, restore, give up,	<i>fendre</i> , to split,
<i>se rendre</i> , to surrender, to go, betake oneself,	<i>répondre</i> , to answer,
<i>vendre</i> , to sell,	<i>fondre</i> , to melt, to charge, rush
<i>attendre</i> , to wait, to wait for, to expect,	<i>tondre</i> , to fleece, [at,
<i>s'attendre à</i> , to expect,	<i>répandre</i> , to spread,
<i>entendre</i> , to hear, to understand,	<i>mordre</i> , to bite,
<i>s'entendre à</i> , to understand how to.....	<i>battre</i> , to beat,
<i>étendre</i> , to extend,	<i>se battre</i> , to fight,
<i>tendre</i> , to stretch, to lay,	<i>combattre</i> , to fight,
	<i>rompre</i> , to break,
	<i>interrompre</i> , to interrupt,
	<i>perdre</i> , to lose,
	<i>défendre</i> , to defend, to forbid.

Give the participles, and first singular present and perfect of these verbs.

EXERCISE LXII.

INDICATIVE.

Present.—I return this parcel to its owner. What are you waiting for (*sing.*) ? The dog bites ; don't go near him (*n'approchez pas.*) The wind always breaks his web. We sell *all sorts of things* (*de tout.*) You are taking the copy for the original (confounding the copy with the original.) What do you hope (pretend) to do ? They are extending their front. Why do they extend it ? The big ones beat the little ones (the great, *pl.* beat the little, *pl.*) I forbid it. It is forbidden (one forbids it.) I am losing everything.

EXERCISE LXIII.

I give it you back again. I give in, (*reflec.*) Whom does he expect ? He has been expecting his son for the last two days. What (*à quoi*) does he expect (*reflec.*) ? He expects to be paid. Wine makes the heart glad. What makes you so warm ? I understand (*reflec.*) that (*à cela.*) Do you understand it ? (*y*) *reflec.* We defend our king, our country,

our laws and institutions. We forbid your going out (you to go out.) I forbid you wine and beer. Do you forbid them me? Wax melts. The woodman is splitting logs. The vessels cleave through (split) the foaming waves. They fight well. What are they fighting about? (about what do they fight? *reflec.*) Those boys are always fighting (always fight, *reflec.*) They expect (*reflec.*) to triumph. What do they expect? (to what do they expect? *reflec.*) I am prepared for anything (I expect everything, *reflec.*) They break their step in crossing the bridge. I am getting quite confused (I lose myself.)

EXERCISE LXIV.

Imperfect.—I was expecting you. I had been waiting for (waited since) half an hour. I was going (*reflec.*) to your house (*chez vous.*) I did not expect you. You did not expect me! He jumbled everything (confounded all.) They did not hear us. The ladies were waiting for us at the end of the garden. They expected a row (*sing.* one expected.) Nothing more was heard (one heard nothing more.) Some were fighting, others were defending themselves. They were stretching chains across the streets (one stretched.)

Preterite definite.—I answered his letters immediately (*dat.*) He charged at me (rushed upon me.) William waited three days for the fleet. There they fought till dark. Worn out with fatigue, they waited for daylight on the field of battle.

EXERCISE LXV.

Preterite indefinite.—I forbid your smoking (you to smoke.) What did I hear? What did he answer? He did not answer at all. He has lost his dog. Where did he lose it? We have sold everything. Is it true that you have beaten everybody? They bit the dust. I went to your house, (*reflec.*) He defended himself bravely, (*reflec.*) Those two cocks have fought.

Preterpluperfect.—I had sold all my goods. We had heard that they were coming. They had mixed up (confounded) the two names.

I had gone to Paris, (*reflec.*) He had not expected it (*y,*) (*reflec.*) The news had not yet spread, (*reflec.*)

EXERCISE LXVI.

Future.—I will wait for him. I will defend you from the storm. That fish will break your line. Will he answer? What will he answer? Will your dog bite? Will not John wait for us? They will not beat us this year. We will fight them (*combattre*) on every occasion. We will oppose (*combattre*) all your plans. She will not hear you from there.

I will not give in. Will he expect to find us there? Those lines will extend (*reflec.*) very far. They will soon surrender, (*reflec.*) We shall understand one another very well. They will lose themselves in apologies (confound themselves.)

Conditional.—I would give it all back again. I would not wait any longer (not wait more.) I would break off all intercourse with them. What would you answer?

He would not give in. Would you surrender? Would they understand *how to do all that* (*à faire tout cela*)? They would understand it (*y*) perfectly. They would fight to the extermination of one side or the other (*jusqu' à l'extinction de l'une ou de l'autre partie.*)

EXERCISE LXVII.

SUBJUNCTIVE, (p. 93, 147, 169.)

Present.—I must answer directly. How long (till when, *jusqu' à quand*) must he wait? Must he not oppose (combat) *what he disapproves of* (*ce qu'il désapprouve*)? Do you wish us to (wish that we) give back everything? I wish them (that they) defend you.

Imperfect.—Though he did not expect me, I went to his house. He ought to have (it was necessary that he) broken off with them.

I did not wish that report to spread (that that report should.) I got better without the doctors expecting it *in the least* (without that the doctors expected to it, *reflec.*) (*le moins du monde.*)

EXERCISE LXVIII.

IMPERATIVE, (p. 165.)

Give it up. Do not bite it. Let him answer. Let him answer my letter (*dat.*) Let him not correspond with them. Do not let him wait. Let him answer me. Do not let him answer them (*dat.*) Let him wait for us. Let us break their fence. Let us not break it. Let us beat them. Wait for the waggon. No; do not wait for it. Yes; do wait for it on the contrary. Let them sell their furniture. Break off all agreement with iniquity. Let them wait.

Surrender (*sing.*) Let him defend himself. Let him not surrender. Let him fight. Let him not fight. Let us have an understanding (understand one another.) Expect it, (*pl.*) Do not expect to be favoured.

EXERCISE LXIX.

INFINITIVE.

Will you (do you wish to) wait? You must (it is necessary to) wait. I am (I owe) to give it back to him again. *They went out (ils sont sortis)* to fight (for to fight.) Will you hear me? You must hear me. They went out to hear him.

Participle present.

By (*en*) selling my chickens. He died fighting (in fighting.) Do not forget in answering him (*dat.*) *to give him my love, (de lui dire bien des choses de ma part.)* They entered the town, drums beating, (*sing.*) In the meantime (in waiting) you have missed the train. Until (in waiting) *you are ready, (que vous soyez prêt.)* He likes sarcastic (biting) expressions.

Participle past.

The chateau has been sold. He has been beaten. The ink has been spilt upon my new carpet. A very extensive country, (*campagne*.) Broken sticks. A bended bow. Recently sold property, (a property recently sold.)

EXERCISE LXX.

Prendre, to take, and compounds, throughout. (p. 98.)

<i>S'en prendre</i> , to lay the blame	<i>apprendre</i> , to learn,
on,	<i>comprendre</i> , to understand,
<i>s'y prendre</i> , to set about,	<i>surprendre</i> , to surprise.

Give participles, and first and second singular present and perfect of these verbs.

INDICATIVE.

Present.—I understand that. Do you understand it? He takes too much of it. *That piece of furniture (ce meuble)* takes too much room. We are learning music, French, Italian, dancing, and drawing. You surprise me. Why don't you learn whist? Oh! we do, (Oh! we learn it well.) Those people understand everything. You set about it badly (take yourself to it ill.) Why does he lay the blame on me? (take himself of it to me?)

Imperfect.—I was learning Italian. He was resuming the thread of his narrative. We were taking measures. They did not understand him.

EXERCISE LXXI.

Preterite definite.—I surprised him. They were surprised together, (one surprised them together.) He took it and ate it all, (*tout entier*.) We undertook his education. They immediately took back their lost advantages.

Past indefinite.—I did not understand their language, or their conduct. I heard this morning that he had returned. A thief was discovered (one has discovered a thief) in his

house. Where did you learn that? They took all they could find. The extortioners took everything. Who took all their things? Those are (*voilà*) the things which I took, (p. 155.) You surprised us, (*ib.*) They did not understand them, (*ib.*)

EXERCISE LXXII.

Future.—I shall learn fencing: I(*moi*) botany. You will soon understand it. Those children will never understand anything

Conditional.—I would learn everything. I would not take it back again. What would you learn there? They would take it from you, (*dat.* p. 144.)

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.—Must I take it all? He must not take it. The baker must take these two loaves back again. Which are they to take? (the which do you wish that they should take?) I do not wish you to undertake all that for me.

Imperfect.—I did not wish you to undertake all that for me? Whatever it might have comprised.

Imperative.

Take care, (*sing.*) Let him undertake nothing. Do not take it, (p. 165.) Let us take them. Understand me. Let them not take it. Let them understand us well. Lay it on them, (*reflec.*) Do not blame me for it.

EXERCISE LXXIII.

Infinitive.

What have you to find fault with? I wish to learn geometry. Do not let yourself be surprised? *Make yourself* (*faites vous*) understood, (*inf.*) *That is what you must* (*voilà ce que, it is necessary,*) understand. To undertake nothing is to gain nothing. To undertake everything is a way to secure something, (*c'est un moyen d'assurer quelque-chose.*) In order to take it back again.

Participles.

Present.—In resuming my titles. Not understanding any of it, *I gave it up*, (*j'y ai renoncé*.) An enterprising man. A surprising story.

Past.—He has been caught in *flagrant delinquency*, in the *very act*, (*en flagrant délit*.) *This is what* (*voilà ce qui*) has been undertaken. Your master is very much surprised at your conduct.

EXERCISE LXXIV.

Class *craindre*, to fear, in all parts. (p. 102.)

<i>Craindre</i> , to fear, to be afraid	<i>se plaindre</i> , to complain,
of,	<i>feindre</i> , to feign, pretend,
<i>plaindre</i> , to pity,	<i>joindre</i> , to join ;

and other verbs in *aindre*, *eindre*, *oindre*.

Indicative.

Present.—I pity that poor man. He fears nobody. You are feared everywhere, (one fears you.) We are afraid of the rain. You are pretending. What are they afraid of? (what fear they?) You will be very fortunate if you catch them up, (*sing.*) I do not pity you any more.

We complain of their conduct. What do you complain of? They complain bitterly of their lonely situation. He complains of this and of that.

(*Craindre*, governing the subjunctive, with the help of the particle *ne* ; as, I fear he will come, or his coming, *je crains qu'il ne vienne*.) He fears my coming back. We fear their arriving. They are afraid of its falling.

(The particle is not used, if *craindre* is in the negative.) We are not afraid of his escaping.

(*Se plaindre*, governing *de ce que* ; as, I complain of your not listening to me, that you do not listen to me, *je me plains de ce que vous ne m'écoutez pas*.) I complain of your coming late. We complain of your being dirty and idle.

EXERCISE LXXV.

Imperfect.—I used to be afraid of him. That is all I was afraid of, (I feared but that, p. 146.) We were afraid of disturbing you. What were they afraid of? (what feared one?) The girls (*ces demoiselles*) were painting flowers. They complained of the cold. I was afraid you would be displeased, (*subj.*)

Preterite definite.—I pretended to have a head-ache. He attained his end. Their fugitives joined us, (joined themselves to us, *reflec.*) He only painted one head (painted but one head, p. 146.)

EXERCISE LXXVI.

Preterite indefinite.—He has attained his majority. I have not broken the regulation, (infringed the rule.) I feared that misfortune for you. We did not fear their threats. The dogs were afraid to go near him.

I painted (*reflec.*) my face and hands, (the face and the hands to myself.) The gentleman complained of being badly waited on, (*d'être mal servi.*) Did the gentleman complain of being badly waited on? Did he not paint his face? The allies complained of our being faithless to them, (*de ce que nous leur avons manqué de foi.*)

Future.—I shall fear nothing as long as you are with me. We shall soon catch you up, (p. 145.) I shall complain of it, (*ib.*)

Conditional.—I would complain of it, (*ib.*) I would not pity them at all. They would not be afraid of that.

EXERCISE LXXVII.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.—Whom am I to fear most? (is it necessary that I fear most?) Must I complain of it? (is it necessary that I?) Call him, so that he may join us directly.

Imperfect.—He was obliged to pretend (it was necessary that he should) not to hear. I was obliged to fire very high, (*je dus tirer bien haut,*) for my bullets to hit the mark (for that my bullets should hit) at that distance.

EXERCISE LXXVIII.

IMPERATIVE.

Fear nothing. Join them, (*sing. p. 165*) Let us pity the unfortunate. Put the candle out. Let them complain. Compel them to obey. Infringe not the laws. Let us fear God. Fear not to tell the truth. Let us not fear to approach. Let us fear *his winning the day*, (*qu'il ne l'emporte.*) Fear, *lest he take refuge, his taking refuge amongst you*, (*qu'il ne se réfugie chez vous.*)

INFINITIVE.

He is to be pitied, (he is to pity.) It is to be feared, (it is to fear.) That poor man is much to be pitied. It was to be feared *he would lose his situation*, (*qu'il ne perdit sa place.*) You must (it is necessary to) pretend. Must we fear that? I am fond of painting, (I love to paint.)

PARTICIPLES.

Present.—Fearing to displease you, (*de vous mécontenter.*) On reaching the age of seventy-five, he expired, (extinguished himself.)

Past.—He was arrested for having painted the church-door scarlet. You have been feared. He has been pitied. The object has been attained. Your cigar is out. Life was extinct.

EXERCISE LXXIX.

Class *connaître*, to know, in all parts. (p. 127.)

Connaître, to know,
reconnaître, to recognize, know
again,

se connaître en... to be a judge
of.....

se connaître à, to know how to...
to understand,

se reconnaître, to know where
one is, to recognize the land,

méconnaître, to fail to know, to
disregard,

naître, to be born, to grow,

paraître, to appear, to seem,

croître, to grow, increase,

paître, *n.* to feed,

se repaître de, to feed on.

INDICATIVE.

Present.—I know their ways. I can detect your work in that, (I recognize there your blows.) Do you know (*sing.*) *this lady?* (*Madame?*) That light appears and disappears alternately. We come into the world (we are born) sinners. The spots are disappearing. That looks easy; the others do not look easy at all. You grow most generally on the moist banks of the river. Do you know any one here? You know me, *don't you?* (*n'est ce pas?*) My boys know all that. I know people, *reflec.* (I know myself in, am a judge of people, *je me connais en gens.*) Are you a judge of jewellery? Let me arrange your garden for you, (*permettez que je vous arrange votre jardin.*) I understand it, (I know myself at it, *je m'y connais.*) Do you understand tying knots?

EXERCISE LXXX.

Imperfect.—I knew Paris and all its neighbourhood then. Apparently he did not know you. We only knew one person in all that vast town. Her sheep were feeding around her. I had known him for ever so long, (knew him since a long time.)

Preterite definite.—I then knew what sort of people I was with, (with what sort of people I was.) That comet appeared again in 1762. Those sails soon disappeared. Napoleon was born on the 15th of August. She was born poor.

EXERCISE LXXXI.

Preterite indefinite.—I never knew him. When daylight appeared, I knew where I was, (*reflec.*) His new book has not appeared yet. I was born in France. Where were you born? They were born in India. Those ruffians fed on our blood, (*reflec.*)

Future.—I shall know you by (*à*) those marks. Then you will disown me. When he appears again, *you will fire a shot*, (*vous tirerez un coup de fusil.*) We shall soon know (recognize) whether they are the true ones, (*si ce sont les véritables.*)

Conditional.—I should know it again directly. His own mother's eyes would fail to know him, (*méconnaître.*) In that costume, no one would recognize you.

EXERCISE LXXXII.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.—When must I appear? You must look pleased. How would you have me (how do you wish that I should) know a man I never saw, (whom I never have seen?) In order that they should know you (*reconnaître.*) you must wear a white hat, (*il faut porter un chapeau blanc.*)

Imperfect.—He spoke to me, without my answering him, (*reconnaître.*) I took measures, in order that that villain should not re-appear here. For those marks to disappear (in order that those marks should,) *we have had to use the strongest acids, (il a fallu nous servir des acides les plus forts.)*

IMPERATIVE.

Appear. Do not appear surprised! Disappear at once. Let us appear suddenly. Do recognize me, (*donc, at the end of the sentence.*) Do show yourself, (p. 54.) Give them time to find out where they are, (let them recognize themselves a little, p. 55.)

EXERCISE LXXXIII.

INFINITIVE.

Without knowing me. Do not let yourself be known, (p. 155.) Now let yourself be recognized. Ready to appear. Ask for the *Moniteur* which has just appeared, (p. 159.) Have you seen the pamphlet which has just appeared? You were but just born. Introduce me to that gentleman: I wish to know him.

PARTICIPLES.

Present.—He died on coming into the world, (being born.) My heart beat *with joy* (*mon cœur bondit de joie*,) on recognizing *those places*, (*ce séjour*,) Knowing in *what difficulties* he was (*l'embarras dans lequel il se trouvait*,) I went to his help, (*j'allai à son secours*,)

Past.—Without having ever appeared on these shores, he was very well known here. He is too well known. She was born in our house, (is born.) He is recognized as the cleverest man in England. He was a man of known worth, (*reconnaitre*,) She was a woman of known wisdom.

EXERCISE LXXXIV.

Class *conduire*, to conduct, in all tenses. (p. 123.)

<i>Conduire</i> , to conduct, take, bring,	<i>reconstruire</i> , to build again,
lead, manage, drive,	<i>instruire</i> , to instruct, inform,
<i>se conduire</i> , to behave,	<i>nuire à</i> , to injure,
<i>traduire</i> , to translate,	<i>luire</i> , to shine,
<i>construire</i> , to build,	<i>induire</i> , induce, lead.

INDICATIVE.

Present.—I am translating some very hard French. They are building (one builds) a new bridge here. We are managing all that case.

He behaves badly. That is translated (*reflec.* translates itself) in this manner. Bridges are built (*reflec.* build themselves) *in various ways*, (*de plusieurs manières*,) Their helmets are shining in the sun.

EXERCISE LXXXV.

Imperfect.—I used to guide my father's flocks. The emperor was driving his carriage himself. This is how the passage was translated, (behold how the passage translated itself.) They were making (one was constructing) a viaduct.

Preterite definite.—He behaved himself *as a* (*en*) clever man. He translated the passage for him, (*dat.*)

EXERCISE LXXXVI.

Preterite indefinite.—I took her to the ball. He behaved badly. We informed him of the circumstance. We informed him of it. That injured us. How much of it have you translated? I have translated half (of it.)

Future.—I will take you everywhere. My solicitor will manage your case for you. Where will he take us? Will you behave better henceforth?

Conditional.—I would take you, if I knew the road. B. would translate it better than that. Those boys would translate the passage easily without a dictionary.

EXERCISE LXXXVII.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.—Where would you like me to take you? (do you wish that I..) Send him to school, so that he may learn, (instruct himself.) They must (it is necessary that they) build the bridge over again, (reconstruct the bridge.)

Imperfect.—He had to take him about everywhere, (it was necessary that he should..)

IMPERATIVE.

Inform me. Lead me. Build it *up*. Let him translate it. Let us behave well. Behave better. Let them behave better. Let those boys behave better, and they shall be rewarded.

EXERCISE LXXXVIII.

INFINITIVE.

Let yourself be led. I cannot translate it. He had to be taken about everywhere, (it was necessary to.) *That is (c'est pour)* to inform you. I have seen him driving, (to drive.) He wished (has wished) to inform himself.

PARTICIPLES.

Present.—In taking you there, I will shew you the beauties of the country. I met *with* a great many difficulties in translating that passage.

Past.—I have been brought here against my will. He is very learned, (informed.) A very learned man. Robinson Crusoe has been translated *into a number of languages*, (*en beaucoup de langues.*) They were led into error.

EXERCISE LXXXIX.

Class *mettre*, to put, in all parts.

<i>Mettre</i> , to put, to put on,	<i>démettre</i> , to depose,
<i>se mettre</i> , to dress, to put one-	<i>se démettre</i> , to resign,
self, begin,	<i>permettre</i> , to permit,
<i>admettre</i> , to admit,	<i>promettre</i> , to promise,
<i>commettre</i> , to commit,	<i>remettre</i> , to put off, to put back,
<i>compromettre</i> , to compromise, to	to remember,
endanger,	<i>se remettre</i> , to recover.
<i>emettre</i> , to emit,	

INDICATIVE.

Present.—I put sugar in my tea. Mr. Frank never puts milk in his coffee. They are only putting powder in their guns, no shot. What are you putting there? Your conduct compromises your party. The gentleman promises *to come back again*, (*de revenir.*) Do you remember me? Yes; now I remember you. She takes great care with it, (puts great care to it.) He never wears a *great coat*, (*par-dessus.*) He always begins laughing, (puts himself to laugh.) Those young ladies dress well, (*reflec.*) With your leave, (do you allow me?) What are you troubling your head about? (of what are you putting yourself in pain?) I trouble my head about what I choose, (I put myself in pain of that which I wish.)

EXERCISE XC.

Imperfect.—I never allowed that. They (*on*, sing.) were laying the cloth. We were not allowed to smoke, (one permitted us not to smoke.)

How used you to dress? (*reflec.*) The poor boy was looking forward to a great treat, (promised himself much pleasure.)

Preterite definite.—We were allowed (one allowed us) to enter *one at a time*, (*un à un.*) Gerard, seeing all those hindrances, put off his journey. My uncle got into a rage, (put himself in anger.) He set off running immediately, (he put himself to run.) We set off at six o'clock the next morning, (we put ourselves *en route.*) We set off again, (we put ourselves again *en route.*) Those three inseparables set out for Geneva *on* the 8th of June. On seeing us, the rascals set off at full speed, (put themselves to run.) The little rogue began to cry, (put himself to cry.)

EXERCISE XCI.

Preterite indefinite.—For that grand occasion, I put on my best clothes. He promised me to be ready. We have been permitted (one has permitted us) to go out. We have transferred your orders to them. Have you put my books, or did you put my books, in their places again?

I have dressed myself (*reflec.*) as you see. Ulric began to dance like a madman. We set off running after them. Did you expect (promise to yourself) much pleasure?

EXERCISE XCII.

Preterpluperfect.—Yes; I had promised myself a great deal of pleasure. We had all set to work eating, (put ourselves (*reflec.*) to eat.) Bob had dressed himself out like a bridegroom.

Jeannette had bestowed a great deal of care on her dress. M. Jourdain had put on his fine chintz dressing-gown, (*sa belle indienne.*)

EXERCISE XCIII.

Future.—What shall I put there? You will put what I tell you, (*fut.*) What always puts him in a rage is. . . . What shall we set about now? *reflec.* (to what shall we put ourselves now?)

Conditional.—I would put that there. Would you not put them somewhere else? I am sure he would never recognize you like that. We would only (*ne que*) admit three people.

EXERCISE XCIV.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.—He wishes me to put on my hat and accompany him, (wishes that I. . . p. 147.) Must he put on his uniform? (is it necessary that he. . . ? p. 93.) Yes; we wish him to put it on. I cannot speak without you immediately beginning to laugh, (without that you put yourselves immediately. . . p. 148.) They must not commit blunders.

Imperfect.—He ought not to have put on that old coat, (it was not fitting that he should. . .) They could very well remain there, without your getting in a rage for that.

EXERCISE XCV.

IMPERATIVE.

Put yourself *in (à)* my place. Let him put himself *in (à)* my place. Put water in your glass. Let the servant put a glass on the table. Let us set out, (let us put ourselves *en route*.) Here is a louis d'or; put it in that handkerchief. Recover yourself. Do not be concerned (do not put yourself in pain.)

Promise me (*dat.*) secrecy. Do not promise them (*dat.*) that. Admit no strangers. Let us not promise any help. Let him set out directly. Let her dress better. Let the men set off again to morrow at day-break. Let them recover themselves.

EXERCISE XCVI.

INFINITIVE.

Here is (voici) a louis to (pour) put in your purse. You must not put yourself in the middle of the street. Translate all, without omitting anything. To promise so much is not wise.

PARTICIPLES.

Present.—By putting off my journey, I shall be able to see him. He crossed the country, subjecting all on his way. He reached the sea, putting all to fire and sword. Setting aside *this little hobby, he is an excellent creature, (sa petite manie, c'est une excellente nature.)*

Past.—Was he well dressed? She is always well dressed. He has not been admitted. Our party is endangered by his blunder. He is quite recovered. He has been deposed from his office.

EXERCISE XCVII.

Class *écrire*, to write, in all parts.

Écrire, to write, spell, .

décrire, to describe,

prescrire, to prescribe,

souscrire, to subscribe, consent,

proscrire, to prescribe, outlaw,

récrire, to write again,

transcrire, to transcribe, copy out.

INDICATIVE.

Present.—I write to him every day. Do you subscribe to those conditions? Those boys are copying out their exercises. How do you spell “war” and “hardly” in French? One is spelt this way, and the other is spelt in that way, (writes itself.)

Imperfect.—He wrote execrably. What was he writing?

Preterite indefinite.—He has not written to me yet. Your son is the most delightful person, (the most charming man.) He has been describing all his travels to me.

Preterite definite.—I wrote immediately to secure rooms. He wrote to his father to announce his arrival.

EXERCISE XCVIII.

Future.—Now (*voyons*,) when will you write to me? We will both write to morrow evening. I will only write three lines, just to say where we are. All that will be described (one will describe. .) to you. When will they write? (*pl.*)

Conditional.—If I were you (*à votre place*,) I would write an account of my travels. Were I to describe (p. 153, 163,) that to him twenty times, *he would understand it none the better*, (*il n'en serait pas plus avancé.*) You would write better, if you held your pen *in this way*, (*ainsi.*)

EXERCISE XCIX.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.—Now, what am I to write? You must write a detailed account of the whole event. They must not write that. Whatever you write, be clear and accurate. You must write it better than that, or I will not take it.

Imperfect.—People (*on*) did not suppose I would write an account of the whole matter. He ought to have written it better.

IMPERATIVE.

Write. Write down his statement. Let everything be described, (one describe everything.) Let *it (cela)* be spelt (*reflec.*) one way or another; the meaning is clear. Write better than that. Let us write to him. Let us not write to him yet. Let them write their objections to me.

EXERCISE C.

INFINITIVE.

Do not forget to write to me. Try to write better. You must write better, or your exercises will be torn over. Before writing, arrange the subject.

PARTICIPLES.

WPresent.—In copying this over, I found three 'faults. whilst (all in) describing the scenes, he exhibited pictures of them.

Past.—It was so fated (it was written.) Written letters.

EXERCISE CI.

Class *dire*, to say, in all parts.

<i>Dire</i> , to say, to tell,	<i>contredire</i> , to contradict,
<i>redire</i> , to say again, to repeat,	<i>médire</i> , to slander,
<i>prédire</i> , to predict, prophecy,	<i>maudire</i> , to curse, (p. 109.)
<i>interdire</i> , to prohibit,	

INDICATIVE.

Present.—I tell you (that) it is not true. He says *that we are wrong*, (*que nous avons tort.*) What does he say? We say *the same*, (*de même.*) Oh! you say the same thing! What do you say *to that*? (*de cela?*) He is said to have.. (one says that he has..) That is what one says. What does one say? It is said that.. (one says that..) Is it not said.. (does not one say that..?) I tell you so (it.) Oh! say I! Ah! says he. Those people never tell the truth. We say then, that you spend forty pounds. He is said to be proud, (one says him proud.) I say it, and I repeat it. He says so (it.) They prohibit us all sorts of pleasures.

EXERCISE CII.

Imperfect.—I was saying then..... Ah! what were you saying? He was saying what he had heard. He always said the same things over again. That old peasant *used to play the wizard* (*faisait le sorcier,*) and foretold the future. We were saying then... Those good ladies talked scandal about all their dear friends. They cursed their stars. I told you so (it.) Did not I tell you so? (I told it you well.)

Preterite definite.—No, said I to him. We told him (*dat.*) all. They told us not to approach.

Preterite indefinite.—I said that. What did you say? (*sing.*) He told us *to (de)* go away, (*inf.*) He said to us “go away.” Go, said he to him. We have contradicted that news. What did you say? We *only* said that. (*ne que.*) I told you so, (I have well told you it.) I had told you so, (I had well told it you.)

EXERCISE CIII.

Future.—What shall I say? I will say nothing. *This is (voilà)* what we will say. What will be said? (what will one say?) What will be said (what will people (one) say) about it? *The things said on any subject, (le qu’en dira-t-on.)* I care not (*je me moque de*) for what will be said. They will say what they like, (*fut.*)

Conditional.—I should say that you were mistaken. Would you not say (*sing.*) *as I do? (like me?)* He would tell the truth, *I am sure, (j’en réponds.)* He could say nothing. He would never say that. *That is what (voilà ce que)* he would never say. One would say. It looks like. (one would say.) Does it not look like? (would not one say?) It looks like a river. You could imagine it was (it looks like) an armed horseman. We would say this. You would say that. They would say nothing.

EXERCISE CIV.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.—Whatever I may say, *I shall always be wrong, (j’aurai toujours tort.)* I give you this, so that you may not say *that I never gave you anything, (que je ne vous ai jamais rien donné.)* What must I say? They must tell me why. Shall we (do you wish that we) tell him the truth. Yes; I wish you to tell me the truth.

Imperfect.—Shall you know it, without my telling you? Oh yes! I shall know it all without your telling me. He ought not (*il ne fallait pas que*) to have said it again.

EXERCISE CV.

IMPERATIVE.

Say in what place you concealed it, (*sing.*) Let him say where he put it. Let us say, and let us say over again, the same thing. Tell, Oh ! tell the great deeds of that glorious day ! Let them say something, or let them say nothing ; *it is all the same to me, (cela m'est parfaitement égal.)* Tell us all. Do not tell us nonsense, (*des bêtises.*) Only tell them that..(*ne que.*) Let him tell me the business. Let him not tell them the case. Tell them all. Do not tell them anything. I say, (say then.) I say, Have not you finished ?

EXERCISE CVI.

INFINITIVE.

I have to tell you. What have you to tell me ? I have heard (heard to say) that the Chinese eat rats, puppies, and kittens. One hears a great many things which are not true. What have you to say ? Not to mind what people say, (to allow to be said, p. 155.) Never mind what they say. They may say what they like, (it is in vain for one to say.) You should (*il faudrait*) prohibit knives.

PARTICIPLES.

Present.—Saying thus, he left the room. By prohibiting knives, you will preserve your tables.

Past.—*It (ce)* is said. It is forbidden.

EXERCISE CVII.

Class *lire*, to read, in all parts. (p. 111.)

Lire, to read,
relire, to read again,
élire, to elect.

INDICATIVE.

Present.—I am reading a letter. He is reading a very good French book, which interests him exceedingly. We read (one reads) in the Gospel. . . We are reading. Why do not you read? What are they reading? They read *all* they can get, (*all that which.*)

Imperfect.—When I was reading, *that tiresome fellow* (*ce scélérat*) always came and tormented me, (*inf.*) He used to read everything. As we were reading. They never used to read.

Preterite definite.—I read a sentence from it. He read a passage in it, which struck him forcibly. The priest read; the people listened.

Preterite indefinite.—I read all that in an hour. We have read somewhere, that coffee is a poison.

EXERCISE CVIII.

Future.—I will not read your notes; *do not be afraid*, (*soyez tranquille.*) *Will the people read my book? (will one read?)*

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.—I must read that. He must read my despatch, and send you back again here. Do you not wish him to read the newspapers?

Imperfect.—Did you not wish me to read that letter? What was to be done then? (*que fallait-il donc?*) He was to read it and translate it, (that he should read it, and that he should translate it.)

EXERCISE CIX.

IMPERATIVE.

Read, and often read over again, that chapter. Enough; let him read no more. Let us read no more poetry now; let us read some prose. Now let them read the Memoirs of Saint Simon.

INFINITIVE.

They are going (one goes) to elect a new member. He is to be re-elected (one is to re-elect him, p. 167.)

PARTICIPLES.

Present.—I learn a great deal by reading *the notices on the walls, (les affiches.)* By reading again what you have read there, you will discover your error.

Past.—They are put there (one puts them there) to be read. A thing read is not necessarily a thing known.

EXERCISE CX.

Class *faire*, to do, in all parts.

<i>Faire</i> , to do, to make, to cause,	<i>se défaire</i> , to get rid of,
to matter,	<i>contrefaire</i> , to counterfeit,
<i>refaire</i> , to do again,	<i>satisfaire</i> , to satisfy.
<i>défaire</i> , to undo, to defeat, to rid,	

INDICATIVE.

Present.—I do a great many things *at once, (à la fois.)* You do too many things at once. One does everything; the other does nothing. James does nothing but play, (does but, *ne que*, play, *inf.*) We do the same, (*de même.*) You are making a noise, (*du bruit.*) They do good. You do right. Why do not you do it? You do right; they do wrong. Everybody does that. Bees make honey. What are the soldiers *about (doing?)* (what do the soldiers?) They are exercising, (they make the exercise.) Those boys make a great many mistakes. My mistresses are making pomatum. How do they make it? Those people make *nothing in the world (absolument)* but baskets. Do you do nothing else, said he? Why do you do that? I do it *merely (ne que)* to please you. How is butter made? (does one make butter?) Butter is made with cream, in a churn. Our clergyman does good everywhere. What pace are you going at? (how much do you do?) How much do they *get over (do)* in an hour? They *get over (do)* nearly a league and a half. I generally walk (do) four miles *an hour, (à l'heure.)*

EXERCISE CXI.

Imperfect.—Whilst I was doing my exercise, Thomas was making a dreadful noise. What were you doing all that time? I did *as everybody else did, (comme tout le monde.)* What were those girls making? They were making lace. They did nothing in the world else, (they made absolutely but, *ne que*, that.) Mr. B. did a great deal of good in the town. John did it well; William did it badly.

EXERCISE CXII.

Preterite indefinite.—I did that *entirely by myself, (tout seul.)* What hast thou done, unhappy one? (*malheureux?*) What have you done *with it (en?)* I do not know what I have done with it. What have we done? alas! John has done all his work. Thomas has not done his, (p. 29.) I have nearly done mine. Francis has only done half of his. What has she done with my hat? What has the servant done with my bonnet and cloak? How has my pupil done? He has done well. How did he do his French? He did it pretty well. And how did he do his mathematics? He did them very badly, *I grieve to say, (je le dis avec peine.)* Your uncle did right, (has well none.) I think your aunt did wrong, (that your aunt has ill done.)

EXERCISE CXIII.

Preterite definite.—I quickly made my retreat. The man counterfeited death, and so escaped. Hannibal defeated the Romans at Cannæ. What didst thou do? And the prince, what did he do? *What he did? (ce qu'il fit?)* He made good heart against bad fortune. We beat a retreat, (made retreat.) You made a great mistake. The robbers spoke all at once, and made a fine noise.

EXERCISE CXIV.

Future.—I will do that for you. No; you shall not do it. The servant shall do it. To day we will walk (make) fifteen

miles; to-morrow, twenty. What will you do, Perinette, what will you do with your twenty sous? They will do all they can, (all their possible.) Will that suit you? (will that make your affair?) The old *ones* will do better than the new *ones*.

Conditional.—In that place I would make a fortune in three years. What would you do in my place? In your place, I would make *no end of a fuss*, (*le diable à quatre*.) think we should do *what you want better*, (*mieux votre affaire*.) They would do much better *to (de)* come with us. What would you not do *to (pour)* be in my place?

EXERCISE CXV.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.—What must I do? (is it necessary..?) What shall we do? (will you that we do?) Whatever you do, make haste. I am going to watch them, to prevent their making mistakes, (for that they make no mistakes.)

Imperfect.—I had to do it all, (it was necessary that I should do all.) Whatever he might do, it was in vain.

IMPERATIVE.

Do thy duty. Do not make long speeches. Let him do his utmost. Let us make *an awful row*, (*le diable à quatre*.) Don't let us make any noise. Do this. Do not do that. Let them do *what they like*, (*ce que bon leur semble*.) Do it. Do not do it. Let him make them. Don't let him make them.

EXERCISE CXVI.

INFINITIVE.

What is, or was, to be done? (*what to do, que faire?*) I do not know what to do. Leave them—him—any one alone. Do not interfere, (*leave to be done, laissez faire*.) You may do what you like; it will all go for nothing, (*you will do in vain, vous avez beau faire*.) Leave it to me, (leave to be done by me, *dat.*)

All he does and says goes for nothing. Leave it to me, I will settle it. What was to be done in that emergency? Do you think I am going to leave you to act alone? Do nothing; let them alone. What on earth did he want to go in that galley for? (what did he go to do in that galley?) Sir, said he, I will satisfy you, (I am going to satisfy you.) Before making his will. The housekeeper wished the old man to begin (*la gouvernante voulait que le vieillard commençât*) by making his will.

PARTICIPLES.

Present.—By so doing. On the way, (way-making.) He earns his livelihood (*il gagne sa vie*) by counterfeiting blindness.

Past.—It is done, (*ce.*) Let us see, is it done? Mr. D. is very much pleased (very satisfied) *with you*, (*de vous.*) He has been defeated. Their army had been defeated. It is a settled matter, (a thing done.) The beds are made. The harvest is not yet made.

EXERCISE CXVII.


Faire, governing an infinitive.

N. B. To have done, cause to be done, *is rendered by faire, followed by an infinitive. The accusative case, coming between the verbs in English, to follow the latter verb in French.*

Faire faire, to have made, cause to be made, or done.

faire faire un bateau, to have a boat made.

faire allumer du feu, to have a fire lighted.

 The person *made to do* is put in the accusative, if the verb following *faire* is neuter; and generally in the dative, if the verb following *faire* has an accusative after it; as,

To make some one run,	<i>faire courir quelqu'un.</i>
to have something done by some one,	<i>faire faire quelque chose à, or par quelqu'un.</i>

Should a personal pronoun represent the agent, it is placed before the two verbs in the accusative or dative case, as explained : so,

To make him run,	<i>le faire courir.</i>
to make him do something,	<i>lui faire faire quelque chose.</i>
I made him come up,	<i>je l'ai fait monter.</i>
we made her sing,	<i>nous l'avons fait chanter.</i>
I made him ascend the staircase,	<i>je lui ai fait monter l'escalier.</i>
we made her sing a song,	<i>nous lui avons fait chanter une chanson.</i>

Should *faire* be in the imperative affirmative, second singular, first or second plural, the pronouns will go between the verbs ; as,

Make him run,	<i>faites-le courir.</i>
make him take a glass of wine,	<i>faites-lui prendre un verre de vin.</i>

The accusative, governed by the second verb, may be a personal pronoun ; in which case it will precede the two verbs, with the dative pronoun ; as,

I made him see it,	<i>je le lui fis, or ai fait voir.</i>
I made her take it,	<i>je le lui fis, or ai fait prendre.</i>
we had them told it, or we made them say it,	<i>nous le leur avons fait dire.</i>
he had it given to him,	<i>il le lui a fait remettre.</i>
you had them returned to her, } you made her give them up, }	<i>vous les lui avez fait rendre.</i>

Should *faire* be in the imperative affirmative, second singular, first and second plural, the pronouns will go between the two verbs ; as,

Make her take them,	<i>faites les lui prendre.</i>
have them taken away from her,	<i>faites les lui enlever.</i>
have them given to them,	<i>faites les leur rendre.</i>
let us make them give them up,	<i>faisons les leur rendre.</i>

Have the door shut? Get the house shewn you. To keep waiting, (to make to wait.) Do not keep us waiting. I keep no one waiting, (make to wait no one.) He will make you laugh. He makes everybody laugh. I will send for you, (make you to be called.)


EXERCISE CXVIII.

Faire reflectively, to make, to cause one-, it-self; to be made, to be done.

How is that done? (How does that do itself?) *It (cela)* is done in this way. Silk is made in France. War is going on (makes itself) in America. To make oneself beloved. To stand till one dies, (to cause oneself to be killed.) The Swedes held out *to a man, jusqu'au dernier.* To keep people waiting, (to cause oneself to be waited for.) To require pressing, (to cause oneself to be prayed.) *Now (allons,)* do not keep people waiting! That child always keeps people waiting. He came without requiring any pressing. Oh! Oh! that gentleman requires pressing. Try to make yourself understood. To cut hair; to have hair cut; to have one's hair cut. To paint; to have painted; to have oneself—to get—painted. To pull out a tooth. To have a tooth pulled out. I must have my hair cut. I have had my hair cut. Herbert is gone to have his hair cut. Have yourself painted. Have your hair dyed? I had a tooth pulled out.

EXERCISE CXIX.

Faire, governing nouns without the article.

 In the following Exercise, the noun governed by *faire* will not take an article.

To pay (make) attention. He pays no attention. That will give (make) me pleasure. I hope it will be (make) fine weather. He made a fortune *in a very short time, (en très peu de temps.)* People came (one came) *from all directions (de partout)* to pay homage to him. Justice will be done by him, (one will do justice of him.) *To give one's due of punishment to, (faire justice de.)* Those malefactors will meet with condign punishment, (one will do justice on (de) those malefactors. Posterity will pass on this much-boasted monarch the censure that he deserves, (posterity will do justice to (de) this boasted monarch.) You wrong him, (you

do him wrong.) *It (cela) hurts me, (does me ill.)* I value his opinion, (I make case of his opinion.) J. does not value it a bit, (makes not the least case of it.) To pretend (make semblance.) You make one half ashamed of you, (you make pity.)

EXERCISE CXX.

Faire, to act, to affect.

My little dog dies beautifully, (makes the dead, *à merveille*.) He is keeping out of notice, (he is making the dead.) He is acting a new character. He is only pretending, (he makes pretence.) Don't seem to notice anything, (make pretence of nothing.) Acting the man of honour. He is blustering and shewing off, (he makes the brave.) *Now then (allons donc,)* drop that bluster, (don't play the brave.) Have you observed *how very grand Sambo is becoming?* (*how Sambo plays the magnificent?*) Pompey did the handsome (played the generous,) and gave three sous.

EXERCISE CXXI.

Class plaire, to please.

<i>Plaire, to please,</i>	<i>se plaire, to please oneself, take</i>
<i>déplaire, to displease,</i>	<i>delight,</i>
<i>complaire, to comply with,</i>	<i>il me, te, lui, nous, vous plait, I</i>
	<i>like, you like, he likes, &c.</i>
	<i>(impersonal.)</i>

INDICATIVE.

Present.—People like me, (I please people, *dat.*) He does not please every one, (*dat.*) You please no one. Does that please you? If you please, (if it pleases you.) Those things do not always give pleasure (please.) I like to go dressed in this way (it pleases me to.)

Imperfect.—I saw that I was disliked, (did not please.) He was universally liked (pleased everywhere) for his kindness, his good temper, and cheerfulness. His songs were not liked.

EXERCISE CXXII.

Preterite indefinite.—I pleased every one. You chose (it has pleased you) to travel. Your Majesty was pleased (it has pleased your Majesty, *dat.*) to send for us.

Preterite definite.—He gave displeasure by his assumption. His assuming airs displeased. He was too conceited for our circle.

Future.—Will it please you to spend the night in our house? Those two little pictures will please the duchess.

EXERCISE CXXIII.

Conditional.—Will you please to (will it please you to) listen to me? Would she like to hear it?

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.—With your Majesty's pleasure, (may it not displease your Majesty, *dat.*) Be pleased (may it please you) to come up here.

Imperfect.—I was waiting *until you were pleased* (that it should please you) to come and see me.

EXERCISE CXXIV.

Plaire reflectively.

I am fond of being in France, (I please myself in France.) He did not enjoy himself at our house. Those gentlemen amused themselves by (*à*) throwing (*inf.*) stones at us. The little fellow will not like being there much, (will not please himself there :) he would enjoy himself more with us.

EXERCISE CXXV.

Class *croire*, to believe. (p. 119.)

Croire, to believe, to think.

accroire, to give credence.

INDICATIVE.

Present.—You have come (you come) I think from Mr. Roberts (*de la part de M. . .*) to speak to her. Believe me, Mr. Roberts is wrong. I think they will come. We think he will succeed. We do not believe all that is told us, (one tells us.) They tell us a great many things; we only believe half of them. They think they know everything, (everything to know.) Why do they think they know everything? Because they are ignorant.

Imperfect.—I thought I should catch you up (to catch you up) sooner. Their chief thought we were (thought us) behind those hills. We thought you were sisters, (thought you sisters.) You thought you would catch us, (thought to catch us.)

EXERCISE CXXVI.

Croire, negatively and interrogatively used, governs a subjunctive.

I do not think he will come, *subj.* We do not think he will succeed. Do you think it will rain? They did not think we were so near. Did you think that ugly man would ever marry so pretty a person?

EXERCISE CXXVII.

Preterite indefinite.—I was told it, but I did not believe it, (p. 145.) Were you believed? (did one? *ib.*) Why did they not believe me? Alas! now they are lost, (behold them lost.)

Future and Conditional.—I shall think that you are afraid. No one would believe you. Your mother will think you are lost. They will see, and then they will believe. We would feign a retreat: they would think *we were flying*, (*us in flight*.) We would face about suddenly, and attack them.

EXERCISE CXXVIII.

IMPERATIVE.

Believe me you are wrong, (*sing.* p. 148.) Let him think what he likes. Let us believe them. Let us not believe them. Believe it all. Only believe half of it. Let those ladies think what they please, (impersonal.)

INFINITIVE AND PARTICIPLES.

That designing fellow would like to make you believe that he is in the secret. *He tells crams, (il en fait accroire.)* Who is to be believed? You must not think that. I came here, thinking I should find you.

EXERCISE CXXIX.

Boire, to drink. (p. 121.)

INDICATIVE.

Present.—I drink wine when I can get it. You drink (*sing.*) too much water. *He (lui)* drinks too little (of it.) What are you drinking? We are drinking cider. The English drink a great deal of beer.

Imperfect.—I drank nothing, because you drank nothing. What on earth were those ladies drinking? They were drinking a mixture called tea. *What's that? (qu'est-ce que, or c'est que ça?)* Well! it is (it are, p. 150,) dried leaves soaked in hot water. Very poor stuff! (*c'est bien fade!*)

EXERCISE CXXX.

Preterite indefinite.—Have I drunk all that? *It can't be, (c'est pas possible.)* What is the matter with them? (*what have they?*) They have drunk too much.

Preterite definite.—I drank a few drops of it, and immediately fell asleep. We passed the tankard, (we drank *all round, à la ronde.*) The robbers drank my health (*dat.*) in clashing their glasses with mine, (*en trinquant avec moi.*) What we drank, would never be believed, (one would never believe it.)

Future and Conditional.—I will not drink *any* of that. He shall drink nothing but (*ne. . que*) water. You shall drink nothing but wine and water, (*eau rougeie.*) Will you drink champagne, gentlemen? (Will these gentlemen drink champagne?) In your place I would not drink that.

EXERCISE CXXXI.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.—I must drink something, I am dying *with (de)* thirst. He must not drink Burgundy. You want us to drink that! (p. 147.) Thank you! Now you must drink *some* of my Lafitte, (p. 93.) Those people are very healthy, though they only drink water, (p. 147.)

Imperfect.—*If I had had (s'il eût fallu que)* to drink that.. (p. 148.) They wanted him to drink *that stuff, (de cette drogue.)*

IMPERATIVE.

Drink your *own* blood, Beaumunoir, and your thirst will pass off, (*sing.*) Drink *some (of it,* p. 148.) Let him drink some too, (*ib.*) Let us drink, my friends. *You* drink too, you others. Let all drink together, to the health *of the newly-married couple, (des nouveaux mariés.)*

EXERCISE CXXXII.

INFINITIVE.

Will you *have something* to drink? Thank you, I will not drink now. What must one (is it necessary to) drink, and what must one not (is it not necessary to) drink? I made him drink, (p. 205.) Let us make him drink some champagne, (*ib.*) To eat, and drink, and sleep, *is all he can do, (il ne connaît que cela.)* By dint of eating and drinking. Stand us some wine, some beer, &c. (give us for to drink.) Tip the man something, (give a *pour-boire* to the man.)

PARTICIPLES.

Present.—I was on the point of choking, while drinking a glass of water.

Past.—All has been drunk, there is none left, (there remains no more of it.)

EXERCISE CXXXIII.

Class *suivre*, to follow.

Suivre, to follow,
poursuivre, to pursue,

s'ensuivre, to follow as a consequence.

Give participles, and first singular present and future.

INDICATIVE.

Present.—I am following you, (p. 145.) Whom are *they* (*on*) pursuing *there*? (*là bas*?) *You* (*on*) let yourself go; *you* (*on*) follow the stream. We do not follow the fashion. They are following us.

The consequence of that is (it follows, *reflec.* from that...) Then comes the marriage, and all it brings with it, (and all that follows, *reflec.*)

Imperfect.—I think he was following the same direction as ourselves. We were following the road to (of) Mycene.

Preterite definite.—I followed her, (p. 145.) Well, pursued he. We followed them as far as the river. They continued their journey amid innumerable obstacles. That shark followed our ship three days.

Preterite indefinite.—I followed his instructions. I followed him, (p. 145.) I did not follow him. Why did not you follow him? We followed them.

EXERCISE CXXXIV.

Future and Conditional.—Go; I will follow you, (p. 145.) Will he follow us right? We will follow you everywhere. Remorse will pursue him to the very last. These recollections will pursue me relentlessly. I believe that faithful servant would follow him to the grave. What would (what is it that would) follow? *reflec.*

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.—Go slower, so that I may follow you. We must follow him always. Follow who will. Follow me who will.

Imperfect.—I had to follow him for a very long time, (p. 93.)

IMPERATIVE.

Follow me, your only guide, (p. 148.) Let the servant follow with provisions. Let us only follow the straight road. Follow, always follow the bed of the river. Let us go first, and let the others follow us, (p. 145.)

INFINITIVE.

I will follow you, (I go to follow you.) You must follow them, (it is necessary to. . .) That work ought to be briskly carried on, (it would be necessary to carry on...) To have some one followed, (p. 205.) I will have you followed. We had those rogues pursued, (*ib.*) and they were caught up by the sea-side. I will observe them, without following them.

PARTICIPLES.

Present.—By following that track, you will reach the pass. He muttered something as he continued his road.

Past.—Your advice has been followed. Their fleet has been pursued.

EXERCISE CXXXV.

Class *vivre*, to live. (p. 128.)

Vivre, to live, to be alive,
survivre à, to outlive.

Give participles, first singular of present and perfect.

INDICATIVE.

Present.—I live *on (de)* good soup, and not on fine words. Man lives on everything. Living is wretched in that country, (one lives badly.) We live, but that is all. You are all alive, *thank God, (Dieu merci.)* Are they alive? Are the children alive? On what do they live? They have ceased to live, (they live no longer.)

Imperfect.—He lived *as a (en)* cenobite. You were living as a recluse. They were alive *only a moment ago, (il n'y a qu'un moment.)*

Preterite definite.—He lived and died unnoticed. Those flowers only lived an instant, (p. 146.)

Preterite indefinite.—I have not lived long enough. I have worked, and he has lived ; that is not fair. *Why did he not (que n'a-t-il)* live one day more. He has lived long enough. Rose, she has lived what roses live, the space of a morning.

EXERCISE CXXXVI.

Future.—I will live for you. You will live to avenge us. What will those poor creatures live on ? I will not survive you.

Conditional.—I would not live there, *if I were you, (à votre place.)* You would hardly *be able to* live. Were I to live (p. 163) another hundred years, (again one hundred years,) I should never learn to like sour-cROUT. If you were to die, I would not survive you. They are strong ; they would survive all sorts of misfortunes.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.—For those plants to live, you must give them (p. 93) air and light. He must live no longer ; he has lived *long* enough. I allow them to live : it is more than they deserve. Who goes there ? (Whom *do you wish should* live ?)

Imperfect.—That I should live, covered with ignominy ! That tree encumbered the ground : I did not wish it to live any longer. *It was not right (il ne fallait pas que)* for him to survive such disgrace.

EXERCISE CXXXVII.

IMPERATIVE.

Let him live. Let the king live. Long live the king, (Live the king.) Let them live to be our slaves, (to serve us as slaves, p. 162.)

INFINITIVE.

He works to gain a livelihood, (so as to live,) and to maintain his family, (to make his family live, p. 205.) *You should (il faut)* eat to live, and not live to eat.

PARTICIPLES.

Present.—By living as you do, you will squander your income in three years. We crossed the whole island without meeting (*inf.*) a living soul. A live body. A live man. A live woman.

EXERCISE CXXXVIII.

Class *conclure*, to conclude.

Conclure, to conclude,
exclure, to exclude.

Conjugate throughout.

I conclude from that. From thence I conclude.

I concluded that you were wrong.

He was excluded.

Class *résoudre*, to resolve.

Résoudre, to resolve, solve,
absoudre, to absolve.

Conjugate throughout.

I resolved to depart immediately. It was resolved to pardon them.

Preterite indefinite.—That question has been solved, (one has solved. . .) This is what we have resolved upon.

Infinitive.—I will (am going to) absolve you from your sins. Questions very difficult to solve.

Participle past.—This absolute sway over sea and land. . . It has been resolved upon. Three things have been resolved upon.

Class *coudre*, to sew, to sew up, stitch. (p. 130.)

Conjugate throughout.

I sew. I was sewing. I like to sew. She sets about sewing, whenever she has time. He is all stitched up *with* (*de*) gold. Hallo! the ends of the sleeves and bottom of my night-gown are sewn up.

A VOCABULARY,
FORMING
A FEW LESSONS FOR REPETITION,
ON THE USE OF
VERBS IN THEIR AFFIRMATIVE, NEGATIVE,
AND INTERROGATIVE FORMS.

A VOIR.

AFFIRMATIVE.

To have something,
to have a father, a mother,
 brothers, and sisters,
to have spoken,
to have seen and heard,

I have a nephew and a niece,
thou hast an uncle,
he has relations,
it has a taste,
she has taste,
the man has a son,
the house has a garden,
the thing has a handle,
we have children,
you have a friend,
they have a son and a daughter,
they have pink ribbons,
birds have wings,

Avoir quelque chose.
avoir un père, une mère, des
 frères, des sœurs.
avoir parlé.
avoir vu et entendu.

J'ai un neveu et une nièce.
tu as un oncle.
il a des parents.
il a un goût.
elle a du goût.
l'homme a un fils.
la maison a un jardin.
la chose a un manche.
nous avons des enfants.
vous avez un ami.
ils ont un fils et une fille.
elles ont des rubans roses.
les oiseaux ont des ailes.

I had a large room,
 thou hadst fine things,
 he had good friends,
 she had a white dress,
 it had a green cover,
 the beast had small horns,
 it had a long tail,
 we had a safe guide,
 you had faithful servants,
 they had enormous wealth,
 the boys had some amusing
 books,
 the ladies had some very pretty
 flowers,

To have patience,
 to wish, to have desire,
 to be wrong,
 to be right,
 to be cold,
 to be warm,
 to be clever,
 to have more of something,
 to be ashamed,
 to have abilities,

*J'avais une grande chambre.
 tu avais de belles choses.
 il avait de bons amis.
 elle avait une robe blanche.
 il avait une couverture verte.
 la bête avait de petites cornes.
 elle avait une longue queue.
 nous avions un guide sûr.
 vous aviez des domestiques fidèles.
 ils avaient des richesses énormes.
 les élèves avaient des livres
 amusants
 les dames avaient de très-jolies
 fleurs.*

*Avoir patience.
 avoir envie.
 avoir tort.
 avoir raison.
 avoir froid.
 avoir chaud.
 avoir de l'esprit.
 avoir encore de quelque chose.
 avoir honte.
 avoir des moyens.*

NEGATIVE.

To have nothing,
 not to have a father,
 to have no mother,
 to have neither brothers nor
 sisters,
 never to have,
 not to have said,
 to have said nothing,
 to have nothing more,

I have no relations,
 thou hast no troubles,
 it has no colour,
 he has no equal,
 she has no husband,
 the sky has no limits,
 we have no money,
 you have no patience,
 they have no room (space,)

*N'avoir rien.
 n'avoir pas de père.
 n'avoir pas de mère.
 n'avoir ni frères ni sœurs.
 n'avoir jamais.
 n'avoir pas dit,
 n'avoir rien dit,
 n'avoir plus rien.*

*Je n'ai pas de parents.
 tu n'as pas de peines.
 il n'a pas de couleur.
 il n'a pas d'égal.
 elle n'a pas de mari.
 le ciel n'a pas de limites.
 nous n'avons pas d'argent.
 vous n'avez pas de patience.
 ils n'ont pas de place.*

I had neither pens nor paper,
 he had no enemies,
 the bottle had no stopper,
 she had no weaknesses,
 he had no faults,
 we had no servants,
 you had neither knives, forks,
 nor spoons,
 they had no maid-servant,

*Je n'avais ni plumes ni papier.
 il n'avait pas d'ennemis.
 le flacon n'avait pas de bouchon.
 elle n'avait pas de faiblesses.
 il n'avait pas de défauts.
 nous n'avions pas de domestiques.
 vous n'aviez ni couteaux, ni four-
 chettes, ni cuillers.
 ils n'avaient pas de servante.*

RESTRICTIVE.

To have but one friend,
 I have only three francs,
 thou hast nothing but bad pens,
 he has but one weakness, but
 one failing,
 I had only one chair,
 he had only one eye, one arm,
 one leg,
 we have but one care,
 they have only a wretched cot-
 tage to live in,

*N'avoir qu'un ami.
 je n'ai que trois francs.
 tu n'as que de mauvaises plumes.
 il n'a qu'une faiblesse, qu'un dé-
 faut.
 je n'avais qu'une chaise.
 il n'avait qu'un œil, qu'un bras,
 qu'une jambe.
 nous n'avons qu'un seul souci.
 ils n'ont qu'une méchante chau-
 mière pour toute demeure.*

INTERROGATIVE.

Have I your consent ?
 hast thou finished ?
 has he a coat ?
 has the boy a hat ?
 has the church a steeple ?
 have we time ?
 have you any hay, straw, corn,
 barley, oats, or beans ?

have they appeared ?
 have the spots disappeared ?
 had you any more ?
 had they any more powder ?

I shall have all,
 you shall have a part,
 he shall have a master,
 she will have a mistress,
 the bed shall have curtains,

*Ai-je votre consentement ?
 as-tu fini ?
 a-t-il un habit ?
 l'enfant a-t-il un chapeau ?
 l'église a-t-elle un clocher ?
 avons nous le temps ?
 avez-vous du foin, de la paille, du
 blé, de l'orge, de l'avoine, ou
 des fèves ?
 ont-ils paru ?
 les taches ont elles disparu ?
 en aviez-vous encore ?
 avaient-ils encore de la poudre ?*

*J'aurai tout.
 tu en auras une partie.
 il aura un maître.
 elle aura une maîtresse.
 le lit aura des rideaux.*

we shall have fine weather to-day,	<i>nous aurons beau temps aujourd'hui.</i>
you will have an answer to-morrow,	<i>vous aurez une réponse demain.</i>
they will have a rare surprise, when they have done,	<i>ils auront une belle surprise. quand ils auront fini.</i>
when the children are in bed,	<i>quand les enfants seront couchés.</i>
I should be ashamed,	<i>j'aurais honte.</i>
you would be wrong,	<i>tu aurais tort.</i>
he would be cold,	<i>il aurait froid.</i>
we should have horses, dogs, cattle, sheep,	<i>nous aurions des chevaux, des chiens, des bestiaux, des moutons.</i>
you would have a carriage,	<i>vous auriez une voiture.</i>
they would have a horse,	<i>ils auraient un cheval.</i>

INTERROGATIVE AND NEGATIVE.

Have I no mistakes ?	<i>N'ai-je pas de fautes ?</i>
have you not begun ?	<i>n'as-tu pas commencé ?</i>
has he not a bad habit ?	<i>n'a-t-il pas une mauvaise habitude ?</i>
has not that man any conscience ?	<i>cet homme n'a-t-il pas de conscience ?</i>
has not the tower a clock ?	<i>la tour n'a-t-elle une horloge ?</i>
have we no wood ?	<i>n'avons-nous pas de bois ?</i>
have you no eyes, no nose, no sense ?	<i>n'avez-vous pas d'yeux, pas de nez, pas de sens ?</i>
have they then no knowledge at all ?	<i>n'ont-ils donc aucune connaissance ?</i>
have those people no resources ?	<i>ces gens n'ont-ils pas de ressources ?</i>
had you nothing more ?	<i>n'aviez-vous plus rien ?</i>
had they no more ?	<i>n'en avaient-ils plus ?</i>
You shall have nothing,	<i>tu n'auras rien.</i>
he will have a splendid fortune,	<i>il aura une belle fortune.</i>
she will not have any abilities,	<i>elle n'aura pas de moyens.</i>
he shall have nothing more,	<i>il n'aura plus rien.</i>
we shall have no means of retreat,	<i>nous n'aurons aucune retraite.</i>
you shall not have ink,	<i>vous n'aurez pas d'encre.</i>
they shall have neither wine nor beer,	<i>ils n'auront ni vin ni bière.</i>
those sportsmen will have no luck,	<i>ces chapeurs n'auront pas de chance.</i>
their play will not succeed,	<i>leur pièce n'aura pas de succès.</i>
their room will have no fire-place,	<i>leur chambre n'aura pas de cheminée.</i>

ÊTRE, *to be*, with nominative and attribute.

I am delighted,
 you are mad,
 he is blind,
 it is deep,
 my son is travelling,
 the river is broad,
 we are French,
 you are English,
 they are free,
 the days are short,
 the nights are long,

I am a workman,
 he is a weaver,
 they are Italian,

Where am I ?
 are you hurt ?
 is he there ?
 is she dead ?
 is the fire out ?
 is the house large ?
 are we friends ?
 are you happy ?
 are they sincere ?
 are you a soldier ?
 are they Spaniards ?
 I am here,
 I have been here ten minutes,

I was engaged,
 he was in a dreadful rage,
 she was in London,
 it was round, square, straight,
 crooked, long, short,
 her husband was very handsome,
 his wife was ugly, but very clever,
 you were too rash,
 they were gone,

I am not pleased,
 you are never ready,
 he is not attentive,
 the road is not long,

je suis charmé.
tu es fou.
il est aveugle.
il est profond.
mon fils est en voyage.
la rivière est large.
nous sommes Français.
vous êtes Anglais.
ils sont libres.
les jours sont courts.
les nuits sont longues.

je suis ouvrier.
il est tisserand.
ils sont Italiens.

où suis-je ?
es-tu blessé ?
est-il là ?
est-elle morte ?
le feu est-il éteint ?
la maison est-elle grande ?
sommes-nous amis ?
êtes-vous heureux ?
sont-ils sincères ?
êtes-vous soldat ?
sont-ils Espagnols ?
je suis là—me voici.
je suis ici depuis dix minutes.

j'étais occupé.
il était très-fâché.
elle était à Londres.
il était rond, carré, droit, crochu,
 long, court.
son mari était très-beau.
sa femme était laide, mais très fine.
vous étiez trop téméraire.
ils étaient partis.

je ne suis pas content.
vous n'êtes jamais prêt.
il n'est pas attentif.
le chemin n'est pas long.

the tree is not high,
the thing is not possible,
we are not *in a hurry*,
you are not tired,
they are not rich,

l'arbre n'est pas grand.
la chose n'est pas possible.
nous ne sommes pas pressés.
vous n'êtes pas fatigués.
ils ne sont pas riches.

Those riflemen are skilful
enough,
those colours are not dark
enough,

ces tireurs ne sont pas maladroits.
ces couleurs ne sont pas assez
foncées.

Am I not too short ?
are you not disappointed ?
is he not delighted ?
is your tutor never pleased ?

ne suis-je pas trop petit ?
n'es-tu pas contrarié ?
n'est-il pas ravi ?
votre précepteur n'est-il jamais
satisfait ?

are we not numerous enough ?

ne sommes-nous pas assez nom-
breux ?

are you not in a hurry ?
are they not very glad ?
I was not informed,
he was not good-natured,
she was not proud,
it was not clever,
that was not fair,
it was not right,
the help was not far off,
I *had been* there an hour,
He *had been* for three years in
London,

n'êtes-vous pas pressé ?
ne sont ils pas contents ?
je n'étais pas prévenu.
il n'était pas complaisant.
elle n'était pas fière.
cela n'était pas adroit.
cela n'était pas juste.
cela n'était pas bien.
le secours n'était pas loin.
j'étais là depuis une heure.
il était à Londres depuis trois
ans.

What was I ?
were you up stairs ?
No, I was down stairs,
was he nice—gentlemanly ?
was that young lady nice ? was
she proper, graceful ?

qu'étais-je ?
étais-tu là haut ?
non, j'étais en bas.
était-il comme il faut ?
cette demoiselle était-elle gen-
tille ? était-elle bien, était-
elle gracieuse ?

are you still angry ?
is that fruit ripe ?
had you been long there ?

êtes-vous encore fâchée ?
ces fruits sont-ils murs ?
étiez-vous là depuis longtemps ?

I shall be delighted,
when I am old,
you will be wet,
you will be astonished,

je serai charmé.
quand je serai vieux.
tu seras mouillé.
tu seras étonné.

one will be generous, open, and faithful,	<i>l'un sera généreux, franc, et fidèle.</i>
the other will be mean and miserable, sly and treacherous,	<i>l'autre sera mesquin et avare, fourbe et traître.</i>
we shall be late,	<i>nous serons en retard.</i>
you will be in time,	<i>vous serez à temps.</i>
they will be caught,	<i>ils seront attrapés.</i>
Shall we be disturbed ?	<i>serons-nous dérangés ?</i>
when shall you be at home ?	<i>quand serez-vous chez vous ?</i>
will you be more rational ?	<i>serez-vous plus raisonnable ?</i>
when will those drawings be finished ?	<i>quand ces desseins seront ils achevés ?</i>
we were not very much inconvenienced,	<i>nous n'étions pas trop gênés.</i>
they were not dressed,	<i>ils n'étaient pas habillés.</i>
Was not I severe enough ?	<i>n'étais-je pas assez sévère ?</i>
was he not strong ?	<i>n'était-il pas fort ?</i>
was not your brother stronger than you ?	<i>votre frère n'était-il pas plus fort que vous ?</i>
is that a good boy ?	<i>cet enfant là est-il sage ?</i>
were you not in China then ?	<i>n'étiez vous pas alors en Chine ?</i>
were we not in Paris ?	<i>n'étions nous pas à Paris ?</i>
were not the doors shut ?	<i>les portes n'étaient elles pas fermées ?</i>
were not the windows open ?	<i>les fenêtres n'étaient-elles pas ouvertes ?</i>
I shall not be old enough,	<i>je ne serai pas assez âgé.</i>
he will not be ungrateful,	<i>il ne sera pas ingrat.</i>
she will be discovered,	<i>elle sera découverte.</i>
we shall be more fortunate than you,	<i>nous serons plus heureux que vous.</i>
you will be lost,	<i>vous serez perdu.</i>
you will be horridly uncomfortable,	<i>vous serez horriblement mal.</i>
they will be admitted,	<i>ils seront refus.</i>
Shall I be in your way ?	<i>ne serai-je pas de trop ?</i>
shall you not be at home ?	<i>ne seras-tu pas chez-toi ?</i>
will he not be at home ?	<i>ne sera-t-il pas chez lui ?</i>
will not that dress be splendid ?	<i>ce costume ne sera-t-il pas superbe ?</i>
will not that boy be unhappy there ?	<i>cet enfant n'y sera-t-il pas malheureux ?</i>
will you not be at home ?	<i>ne serez-vous pas à la maison ?</i>
will not the children soon be back ?	<i>ses enfants ne seront ils pas bientôt de retour ?</i>

To have had,
I have had a friend,
that man has had three wives,
they have had great possessions,
they have had something un-
pleasant,
we had a few annoyances,

avoir eu.
j'ai eu un ami.
cet homme a eu trois femmes.
ils ont eu de grands biens.
*ils ont eu quelque chose de dés-
agréable.*
*nous avons eu quelques incon-
véniens.*

Have I had your answer ?
what has he had ?
has he met with success ?
when did you get that informa-
tion ?
have you had no news ?

ai-je eu votre réponse ?
qu'a-t-il eu ?
a-t-il eu du succès ?
*quand avez vous eu cette nou-
velle ?*
n'avez-vous pas eu de nouvelles ?

To have been,
I have been slender and tall,
you would never guess it,
he was very fat,
that lady, as a girl, was very
thin,
we have been very good,
you have been impertinent,
they have been attentive,
she has been asked in marriage,

avoir été.
j'ai été svelte et élancé.
on ne s'en douterait pas.
il a été très-gros.
*cette dame, comme demoiselle, a
été très-maigre.*
nous avons été très-sages.
vous avez été impertinent.
ils ont été attentifs.
elle a été demandée en mariage.

Not to have had,
I have had nothing,
I never had a greater bother,

n'avoir pas eu.
je n'ai rien eu.
*je n'ai jamais eu de plus grand
ennui.*

he had no expenses,
we have not had anything,
we had no dictionary,
they had nothing unpleasant,
then they had nothing more,

il n'a pas eu de dépense.
nous n'avons rien eu du tout.
n'avons pas eu de dictionnaire.
ils n'ont pas eu de désagrément.
ensuite ils n'ont plus rien eu.

RESTRICTIVES.

I have only one more chapter to
read,
I have only had one care, only
one source of grief, one
sorrow,

*je n'ai plus qu'un chapitre à
lire.*
*je n'ai eu qu'un souci, qu'un seul
chagrin.*

but one trouble,	<i>qu'un ennui.</i>
he has only one brother,	<i>il n'a qu'un frère.</i>
their army has only had one	<i>leur armée n'a eu qu'un bon</i>
good general,	<i>général.</i>
they never had more than one	<i>ils n'ont jamais eu qu'un seul</i>
child,	<i>enfant.</i>

Not to have been,	<i>n'avoir pas été.</i>
I have not been disturbed,	<i>je n'ai pas été dérangé.</i>
she has not been invited,	<i>elle n'a pas été priée.</i>
has she not been indisposed ?	<i>n'a-t-elle été indisposée ?</i>
we have been pursued,	<i>nous avons été poursuivis.</i>
have you not been to Paris ?	<i>n'avez-vous pas été à Paris ?</i>
we have been to China,	<i>nous avons été en Chine.</i>
they have been to Italy,	<i>ils ont été en Italie.</i>
have they not been to Rome ?	<i>n'ont-ils pas été à Rome ?</i>

 AVOIR—PHRASES.

<i>To be wrong,</i>	<i>avoir tort.</i>
<i>to be right,</i>	<i>avoir raison.</i>
<i>I am right,</i>	<i>j'ai raison.</i>
<i>He is wrong,</i>	<i>il a tort.</i>
<i>are you hungry ?</i>	<i>avez-vous faim ?</i>
<i>No, I am thirsty,</i>	<i>non, j'ai soif.</i>
<i>are you not ashamed ?</i>	<i>n'avez-vous pas honte ?</i>
<i>he would be wrong,</i>	<i>il aurait tort.</i>
<i>I should be ashamed,</i>	<i>j'aurais honte.</i>
<i>Let him take care,</i>	<i>qu'il ait soin.</i>
<i>do not let him be cold,</i>	<i>qu'il n'ait pas froid.</i>

<i>To be clever,</i>	<i>avoir de l'esprit.</i>
<i>he is very clever,</i>	<i>il a beaucoup d'esprit.</i>
<i>to be successful,</i>	<i>avoir du bonheur.</i>
<i>have good luck, }</i>	
<i>he has been very lucky,</i>	<i>il a eu beaucoup de bonheur.</i>
<i>they have been unlucky,</i>	<i>ils ont eu du malheur.</i>
<i>to be angry with some one,</i>	<i>en avoir à quelqu'un.</i>
<i>whom is he in such a rage with ?</i>	<i>à qui en a-t-il ?</i>

 IMPERATIVE.

AVOIR.

<i>Have more patience,</i>	<i>aie plus de patience.</i>
<i>let him have some money,</i>	<i>qu'il ait de l'argent.</i>

let her have an umbrella,	<i>qu'elle ait un parapluie.</i>
let us have a garden, flowers, and fruits,	<i>ayons un jardin, des fleurs, des fruits.</i>
be indulgent,	<i>ayez de l'indulgence.</i>
let them be a little more good- natured,	<i>qu'ils aient un peu plus de com- plaisance.</i>

Have no useless things,	<i>n'aie pas d'effets inutiles.</i>
don't let him have gunpowder,	<i>qu'il n'ait pas de poudre à canon.</i>
let us have no idle people,	<i>n'ayons pas de paresseux.</i>
do not have so many acquaint- ances,	<i>n'ayez pas tant de connais- sances.</i>
let them have no rest,	<i>qu'il n'aient pas de repos.</i>

ÊTRE.

Be lenient,	<i>sois indulgent.</i>
let him be ready,	<i>qu'il soit prêt.</i>
let the window be shut,	<i>que la fenêtre soit fermée.</i>
let us be on our guard,	<i>soyons en garde.</i>
be obliging,	<i>soyez prévoyant.</i>
let them be vigilant,	<i>qu'ils soient attentifs.</i>
be persuaded,	<i>soyez persuadé—soyez convaincu.</i>
do not be uneasy,	<i>soyez tranquille.</i>
Do not be idle,	<i>ne sois pas paresseux.</i>
let him not be rude,	<i>qu'il ne soit pas malhonnête.</i>
let him not be too good-natured,	<i>qu'il ne soit pas trop complaisant.</i>
do not be idle,	<i>ne soyez pas paresseux.</i>
do not be uneasy,	<i>ne soyez pas inquiet.</i>
let them not be unjust,	<i>qu'ils ne soient pas injustes.</i>
do not let those ladies be sitting down,	<i>que ces dames ne soient pas assises.</i>

ÊTRE, third person, with *ce* for its nominative, in the
sense of *he, she, it, they*.

It is I,	<i>c'est moi.</i>
who is it ?	<i>qui est-ce ?</i>
it is not he,	<i>ce n'est pas lui.</i>
is it not she ?	<i>n'est-ce pas elle ?</i>
it is not she,	<i>ce n'est pas elle.</i>
is it you ?	<i>est-ce vous ?</i>
it was you,	<i>c'était vous.</i>
was it not ?	<i>n'est-ce pas ?</i>
no, it was the cat,	<i>non, c'était le chat.</i>
what is that ?	<i>qu'est-ce que cela ?</i>

it is a cork-screw,
it is a hammer,
it is a knife,
it is a fork,
it is a spoon,
it is a penknife,

c'est un tire bouchon.
c'est un marteau.
c'est un couteau.
c'est une fourchette.
c'est une cuiller.
c'est un canif.

Is that a ship ?
it is a large vessel,
they are ships,
they are steamers,

n'est-ce pas un navire ?
c'est un grand vaisseau.
ce sont des bâtiments.
ce sont des bateaux à vapeur.

It was right,
it was wrong,
it is possible,
it is true,
it was not true,
it was not possible,
it is a shame,
it is nice,
it is nasty,

c'était bien.
c'était mal.
c'est possible.
c'est vrai.
ce n'était pas vrai.
ce n'était pas possible.
c'est honte.
c'est bon.
c'est mauvais.

He is a king,
she is a queen,
she was a gipsy,
he is a workman,
she is a workwoman,
he is a labourer,
she is a servant,
they are soldiers,
they are sailors,
they are monks,
they are nuns,

c'est un roi.
c'est une reine.
c'était une bohémienne.
c'est un ouvrier.
c'est une ouvrière.
c'est un ouvrier.
c'est une servante.
ce sont des soldats.
ce sont des matelots.
ce sont des religieux.
ce sont des religieuses.

They are monks,
they are nuns,
he is a priest,
it is a church,
it was a gun,
it was a rifle,
it was a cannon,
they were cannon-balls,
they were bullets,

ce sont des moines.
ce sont des nonnes.
c'est un prêtre.
c'est une église.
c'était un fusil.
c'était une carabine.
c'était un canon.
c'étaient des boulets.
c'étaient des balles.

Is that it ?
is that right ?
yes, that's it.

est-ce là ?
est-ce bien cela ?
oui, c'est cela.

yes, that's right,
 is that a church ?
 yes, that is a church,
 is that you ?
 is that a clock ?
 no, that is not a clock,
 it is a barometer,
 is that your home ?
 no, that is not my home,
 is that the time ?
 no, that is not the time,

c'est bien cela.
est-ce là une église ?
oui, c'est là une église.
est-ce là vous ?
est-ce là une horloge.
non, ce n'est pas une pendule.
c'est un baromètre.
est-ce là votre maison ?
non, ce n'est pas ma maison.
est-ce là l'heure ?
non, ce n'est pas là l'heure.

LESSONS

ON

THE USE OF VERBS OF ALL CONJUGATIONS,

IN THEIR CONNECTION

WITH NOUNS, ADJECTIVES, AND PRONOUNS.

The objective, personal, and relative Pronouns precede the verb.

Man inhabits the earth,
 the earth nourishes him with
 her productions,
 he cultivates it,
 the earth turns around the sun,
 the sun lightens and warms
 it,
 the heat that it imparts,
 produces vegetation,
 time passes,
 nothing stops time,
 clocks, time-pieces, and watches
 measure it,

l'homme habite la terre.
la terre le nourrit de son pro-
 duit.
il la cultive.
la terre tourne autour du soleil.
le soleil l'éclaire et la réchauffe.

la chaleur qu'il répand.
produit la végétation.
le temps passe.
rien n'arrête le temps.
les horloges, les pendules, et les
 montres le mesurent.

I am looking at you,
why are you looking at me ?
so as to know you again,

*je vous regarde.
pourquoi me regardez-vous ?
afin de vous reconnaître plus tard*

I am looking for my umbrella,
have you seen it ?
I hear Charley,
he is looking for us,
will you remember my com-
missions ?

*je cherche mon parapluie.
l'avez-vous vu ?
j'entends Charlot.
il nous cherche.
vous souviendrez-vous de mes
commissions.*

I will not forget them,
has she cleaned the cups ?
she has cleaned them,

*je ne les oublierai pas.
a-t-elle nettoyé les tasses ?
elle les a nettoyées.*

Will you give me some bread ?
I will cut you some,
I see the others,
where do you see them ?
whom do you see ?
I see Charles and Robert, and a
third, whom I cannot re-
cognize,

*voulez-vous me donner du pain ?
je vous en couperai.
je vois les autres.
où les voyez-vous ?
qui voyez-vous ?
je vois Charles et Robert, et un
troisième, que je ne puis
reconnaître.*

Have you called Helena ?
I have called her,
will she come ?
here she is,
will you shew him the way ?
I have shewn it him,
will you tell them that story ?

*avez-vous appelé Hélène ?
je l'ai appelée.
viendra-t-elle ?
la voici.
voulez-vous lui montrer le chemin ?
je le lui ai montré.
voulez-vous leur raconter cette
histoire ?*

I have told it them,

je la leur ai racontée.

Why do you adopt homœopathy ?

*pourquoi vous livrez-vous à l'ho-
méopathie ?*

Mrs. B. recommends it to us so
strongly,
we always buy these pencils,

*Madame B. nous l'a si fortement
recommandée.
nous achetons toujours de ces
crayons.*

they have been so much recom-
mended to us,
you are ordered to leave this
place,

*on nous les a si fortement recom-
mandés.
on vous ordonne de quitter cet
endroit.*

they are forbidden to speak,

on leur défend de parler.

I am told that the band plays at
eleven,

*on me dit que la musique joue à
onze heures.*

<i>I am desired to tell you that</i>	<i>on me charge de vous dire qu'on</i>
<i>you are expected on the</i>	<i>vous attend sur la plage.</i>
<i>beach,</i>	
<i>he has got a new appointment</i>	<i>on lui donne un nouvel emploi.</i>
<i>given him,</i>	
<i>they are asking for you every</i>	<i>on vous demande partout.</i>
<i>where,</i>	
<i>you are wanted,</i>	<i>on vous demande.</i>
<i>they are very much liked,</i>	<i>on les aime beaucoup.</i>

<i>I wish you to be liked,</i>	<i>je désire qu'on vous aime.</i>
<i>I do not want to be told,</i>	<i>je ne veux pas qu'on me dise.</i>
<i>all I want is for people to be</i>	<i>je demande seulement que l'on</i>
<i>fair,</i>	<i>soit juste.</i>
<i>let me be called at half-past</i>	<i>qu'on m'éveille à six heures et</i>
<i>six, if you please,</i>	<i>demie, s'il vous plaît.</i>
<i>Mama does not wish to be dis-</i>	<i>Maman ne veut pas qu'on la</i>
<i>turbed,</i>	<i>dérange.</i>
<i>we do not wish you to be dis-</i>	<i>nous ne voulons pas que l'on vous</i>
<i>turbed,</i>	<i>dérange.</i>

REFLECTIVES.

<i>I am enjoying myself,</i>	<i>je m'amuse.</i>
<i>he forgets himself very often,</i>	<i>il s'oublie très-souvent.</i>
<i>what is your name ?</i>	<i>comment vous appelez-vous ?</i>
<i>my name is Francis,</i>	<i>je me nomme François.</i>
<i>I am going to take a walk,</i>	<i>je vais me promener.</i>
<i>she often comes walking out</i>	<i>elle vient souvent se promener</i>
<i>this way,</i>	<i>par ici.</i>
<i>what is he doing ? he is out</i>	<i>que fait-il ? il se promène.</i>
<i>walking somewhere,</i>	
<i>Will he never go away ?</i>	<i>est-ce qu'il ne s'en ira pas ?</i>
<i>he is going away,</i>	<i>il s'éloigne.</i>
<i>Mr. P. is much interested about</i>	<i>Monsieur P. s'intéresse beaucoup</i>
<i>you,</i>	<i>à vous.</i>
<i>do you like being here ?</i>	<i>vous plaisez-vous ici ?</i>
<i>no, I am dreadfully dull,</i>	<i>non, je m'y ennue.</i>
<i>we find it very slow too,</i>	<i>nous nous y ennuyons aussi.</i>
<i>I will prevent your making</i>	<i>je vous empêcherai de vous de-</i>
<i>haste,</i>	<i>pecher.</i>
<i>will you make haste ?</i>	<i>vous dépêcherez-vous ?</i>
<i>she could not help crying,</i>	<i>elle ne pouvait s'empêcher de</i>
	<i>pleurer.</i>

*Who is to be trusted now,
I do not trust you,
I even distrust you,
those people will mistrust him,*

*à qui se fier aujourd'hui ?
je ne me fie pas à vous.
je me défie même de vous.
ces gens se défieront de lui.*

*Those boys are fighting,
they are always fighting,
he fought well,
Mr. T. complains of your conduct,
he complained of it again this morning,
who has used my brushes ?*

*ces enfants se battent.
ils sont toujours à se battre.
il s'est bien battu.
M. T. se plaint de votre conduite.*

I, I always do,

*il s'en est encore plaint ce matin.
qui s'est servi de mes pinceaux,
de mes brosses ?
mais c'est moi, je m'en sers tous
jours.*

*I forbid your using them,
I trusted that man too much,
he did not make haste enough,*

*je vous défends de vous en servir
je me suis trop fié à cet homme.
il ne s'est pas assez dépêché.*

IMPERATIVES.

*Go,
come,
take it,
do it,
tell it them,
shew it me,
let him carry them to them,
let them bring them to us,
learn your lesson, and say it to me,
begin,
remove those things,
carry them away,
listen,
understand me,*

*allez.
venez.
prenez-le.
faites-le.
dites-le-leur.
montrez-le moi.
qu'il les leur porte.
qu'ils nous les apportent.
apprenez votre leçon, et répétez-la moi.
commencez.
enlevez ces choses.
emportez-les.
écoutez.
comprenez-moi.*

*Do tell us,
listen to me,
send for him,
only send them five pounds,
send him some,
send them away,
let us begin that now, and let us finish it this evening,*

*dites-nous donc.
écoutez-moi.
envoyez le chercher.
ne leur envoyez que cinq livres.
envoyez-lui-en.
renvoyez-les.
commençons cela maintenant, et
achevons-le ce soir.*

Wait for me,
only wait ten minutes,
expect us at six,
give it him,

*attendez-moi.
n'attendez que dix minutes.
attendez-nous à six heures.
donnez-le-lui.*

Let him expect me at six,
let him wait for us,
let them send him away,
let him bring his friend to us,
let them not see you,
let them help you,

*qu'il m'attende à six heures.
qu'il nous attende.
qu'ils le chassent.
qu'il nous amène son ami.
qu'ils ne vous voient pas.
qu'ils vous aident.*

Do not take it,
do not do it,
do not tell it them,
do not shew it me,

*ne le prenez pas.
ne le faites pas.
ne le leur dites pas.
ne me le montrez pas.*

Let them not bring them to us,
let us not repeat it,
let us not recall them,
do not wait for me,
do not expect us,
do not finish it,
do not give it him,
do not forget me,

*qu'il ne nous les apportent pas.
ne le répétons pas.
ne les rapellons pas.
ne m'attendez pas.
ne nous attendez pas.
ne le finissez pas.
ne le lui donne pas.
ne m'oubliez pas.*

Amuse yourself,
do not hurt yourself,
do not forget yourself,
there are my pens, use them,
make haste,
do not be in a hurry,
don't go away,
turn round,
go away to some distance,
do not go far,
get ready,

*amuse-toi.
ne vous blessez pas.
ne vous oubliez pas.
voici mes plumes, servez-vous-en.
dépêchez-vous.
ne vous pressez pas.
ne vous en allez pas.
tournez-vous.
éloignez-vous.
ne vous éloignez pas.
préparez-vous.*

let him get ready,
expect it,
be on your guard,
rejoice,
do not rejoice at that,

*qu'il s'apprête.
attendez-vous-y.
méfiez-vous.
réjouissez-vous.
ne vous réjouissez pas de cela.*

do not fight,
don't be astonished,
get up,
wash,
dress yourself,
let him make haste,
let him be satisfied with what is
given him,

ne vous battez pas.
ne vous étonnez pas.
levez-vous.
lavez-vous.
habillez-vous.
qu'il se dépêche.
qu'il se contente de ce qu'on lui
donne.

Do not mistake the terminations
é, ez, er, ai, ais, for one
another,

tired, wounded, killed,
you dream, you think, you sleep,

to fall, to think, to cut,
I went, I shrieked, I called,
I was going, I had, I was, I was
drinking,

do not forget the meanings of—

ne confondez pas les terminaisons
é, ez, er, ai, ais.

fatigué, blessé, tué.
vous revez, vous-pensez, vous dor-
mez.

tomber, songer, couper.
j'allai, je criai, j'appelai.
je parlais, j'avais, j'étais, je
buvais.

n'oubliez pas ce que veulent dire—
mener, to take; rester, to
remain; oser, to dare;
ôter, to take away; parer,
to adorn; je ferai, I will
do.

Do not mistake for one another,

ne confondez pas,—battre,
to beat; and bâtir, to
build; étendre, to extend
entendre, to hear, and
éteindre, to extinguish;
haïr, to hate, and hâter,
to hasten; tirer, to draw,
and trahir, to betray;
achever, to finish, and
acheter, to buy; oublier,
to forget, and obliger, to
oblige; jouer, to play,
and jouir, to enjoy; em-
pêcher, to prevent, and
dépêcher, to hasten.

Do not misunderstand these *ne vous méprenez pas sur les*
 words— *mots*,— *falloir*, to be ne-

cessary; *il fallait*, it was
 necessary; *ignorer*, not
 to know; *mettre*, to put;
envoyer, to send; *trépas*,
 death; *défiance*, mistrust.

Do not mix together,

ne confondez pas,—*moine*, a work;
moins, less; *moyen*, a
 means; *mépris*, contempt;
meprise, mistake; *milieu*,
 middle; *meilleur*, better;
milier, thousand; *habit*,
 coat; *habitude*, habit;
habiter, to inhabit; *habil-*
ler, to dress; *ville*, town;
village, village; *rive*,
 bank; *rivière*, river;
âme, f. soul; *ami*, m.
 friend.

Remember,

rappelez-vous bien,—*dont*, of
 which; *donc*, then; *don-*
ne, give; *trois*, three;
treize, thirteen; *très*, very;
boulet, a cannon ball;
balle, a bullet; *cœur*, m.
 heart; *cour*, f. court;
comme, as.

A DICTIONARY

OF
THE WORDS CONTAINED
IN
THE PRECEDING EXERCISES.

A.

A, an, indef. art. *un, une.*
Abolish, v. a. *abolir.*
About, pr. de, sur. [*viron.*]
 — it, them, *en* ; nearly, *adv. en-*
 — concerning, *à propos de.*
Absolutely, adv. *absolument.*
Abstain, v. n. *s'abstenir.*
Access, n. *accès, m.*
Accordingly, adv. *en conséquence.*
Account, n. *récit, m. description, f.*
 (calculation,) *compte, m.*
Accurate, adj. *exact, cte.*
Ache, n. *mal, m.*
Acorn, n. *gland, m.*
Acquire, v. a. *acquérir.*
Across, adv. *à travers. prep. à*
 travers de.
Act, n. *acte, m. fait, m.*
 — *v. n. agir, faire, n. and a.*
 to act a character, *jouer, faire*
 un personnage.

Action, n. *action, f.*
Active, adj. *actif, tive.*
Actor, n. *acteur, m.*
**Actress, actrice, f.
Admire, v. a. and n. *admirer.*
Advantage, n. *avantage, m.*
Advance, v. n. *avancer, s'avancer.*
Adventure, n. *aventure, f.*
Affair, n. *affaire, f.*
Afraid, to be, v. n. *craindre, avoir*
 peur.
 to be afraid of, *v. a. craindre,*
 avoir peur de.
 — of any one's, anything's,
 doing, being, *craindre, avoir*
 peur, que quelque chose, que
 quelqu'un ne fasse, ne soit.
After, pr. *après.*
Afterwards, adv. *après.*
Against, pr. *contre.*
 — one's will, *malgré soi.***

Against my will, *malgré moi*.

Aged, *adj. agé*.

Ago, *adv. il y a, voilà*.

so long ago, *il y a, voilà tant*,
ten years ago, *il y a dix an-
nées*.

Agreement, *v. pacte, m. conven-
tion, f. marché, m.*

Air, *n. air, m.*

Alarm, *n. alarme, f.*

— *v. a. alarmer*.

Alarmed, *p. alarmé, ée*.

All, *adj. tout, -te, tous, toutes*.

— before a rel. pron. *tout ce*.

Alliance, *n. alliance, f.*

Allow, *v. a. souffrir, permettre*.

Allowance, *n. semaine, f.*

Aloud, *adv. fort, haut*. [*changer*].

Alter, *v. a. and n. changer, n. se*

Alternatively, *adv. tour à tour*.

Although, *conj. quoique, (governs
subjunctive.)*

Ambitious, *adj. ambitieux, ieuse*.

Amid, *p. au milieu, à travers de*.

Among, *p. parmi*.

Amuse, *v. a. amuser, divertir*.

Amusement, *n. amusement, m.
divertissement, m.*

Amusing, *adj. amusant*.

Amiable, *adj. aimable*.

Anger, *n. colère, f.*

Angry, *adj. fâché, irrité, en co-
lère; to get, se fâcher*.

— words, *gros mots*.

Animal, *n. and adj. animal*.

Announce, *v. a. annoncer*.

Another, *adj. un autre, pron.
autrui*.

Answer, *v. a. répondre*.

— *v. n. réussir*.

to be answerable, *répondre de*.

Anxious, *adj. impatient, inquiet*.

Any, *adj. the French partitive
article, du, de la, des*.

in negative sentences, *de, au-
cun, aucune*.

Any, as a pronoun, of it, of them,
en.

— longer, *plus long-temps*.

— more, *encore*.

Anything, *quelque chose*.

not anything, *rien*.

in interrogatives, *rien*.

Apartment, *n. appartement, m.*

Apology, *n. des excuses, f. pl.*

Apply, *v. a. appliquer*.

to ask, *v. n. s'adresser*.

Appointment, *n. nomination, f.
emploi, m.*

Approve, *v. a. and n. approuver*.

Apricot, *n. abricot, m.*

Arm, limb, *n. bras, m.*

— (weapon,) *arme, f.*

Arm-chair, *n. fauteuil, m.*

Armed, *p. armé*.

Army, *n. armée, f.*

Arrange, *v. a. arranger*.

Arrest, *v. a. arrêter*.

Arrested, *p. arrêté*.

Arrival, *v. arrivée, f.*

Arrive, *v. n. arriver*.

As, *adv. comme*.

in comparison, *aussi...que*.

— long as, *tant que*.

— much as, *autant que*.

— an, as a, *en*.

Ashamed, *adj. honteux, euse*.

to be ashamed of, *avoir honte*.

Aside, *adv. à part*.

Ask, *v. n. demander à*.

— for, *demander*.

Asleep, *adj. endormi*.

to be asleep, *dormir*.

to fall asleep, *s'endormir*.

Asparagus, *n. des asperges, f. pl.*

Assuming, *adj. suffisant*.

Assumption, *n. suffisance*.

Astonish, *v. a. étonner*.

Astonished, *étonné*.

Astonishing, *étonnant*.

to be astonished, *s'étonner*.

At, *pr. à, de*.

At all, *du tout*.
 Attack, *n. attaque, f.*
 — *v. a. attaquer*.
 Attacked, *p. attaqué*.
 Attend, *v. a. écouter, faire attention*.
 to attend to, *s'occuper de*.
 Austrian, *adj. Autrichien, ienne*.
 Avaricious, *adj. avare*.
 Avenge, *v. a. venger*.
 Avoid, *v. a. éviter*.
 Awful, *adj. épouvantable*.
 Awfully, *adv. horriblement, affreusement, furieusement*.
 Awkward, *adj. maladroit*.

B.

Bachelor, *n. garçon*.
 Back, *adv. de retour*.
 to give back again, *rendre*.
 backwards, *en arrière*.
 Bad, *adj. mauvais, se*.
 Badly, *adv. mal*.
 Baker, *n. boulanger, m. boulangerie, f.*
 Ball, *n. (round,) balle, f. (dance,) bal, m.*
 Balloon, *n. ballon, m.*
 Bank, (of river,) *bord, m. rive, f.*
 (money,) *banque, f.*
 (of grass,) *tertre, m.*
 Banker, *n. banquier, m.*
 Barrel, *n. canon, m.*
 Basket, *n. panier, m.*
 Bathe, *v. a. laver*.
 — *v. n. se baigner*.
 Be, *v. subs. être,—page 41.*
 to be afraid, *craindre, avoir peur*.
 — asleep, *dormir*.
 — angry, *se fâcher*.
 — at dinner, *dîner*.
 — at work, *travailler*.

Be as good as, *valoir*.
 — dull, *s'ennuyer*.
 — expected to, *devoir*.
 — fitting, *falloir*.
 — fond of, *aimer*.
 — in for, to compete, *concourir*.
 — in health, *se porter*.
 — well, *se porter bien*.
 — ill, *se porter mal*.
 how are you, *comment vous portez vous ?*
 — inconvenient, *gêner*.
 — interested, *s'intéresser*.
 — mistaken, *se tromper*.
 — off, *partir*.
 — present anywhere, *se trouver*.
 — ready, *s'empreser*.
 — right, *avoir raison*.
 — satisfied, *se contenter*.
 — singing, *chanter*.
 — successful, *réussir*.
 — suffering, *souffrir*.
 — wrong, *se tromper, avoir tort*.
 Beast, *n. bête, f.*
 Beaten, *p. battu, e*.
 Beautiful, *adj. beau, belle*.
 Beauty, *n. beauté, f.*
 Because, *adj. parceque*.
 — of, *à cause de*.
 Become, *v. a. devenir*.
 Bed, *n. lit, m.*
 Bee, *n. abeille, f.*
 Beer, *n. bière, f.*
 Before, *p. (of time,) avant*.
 — of place, *devant ; adv. auparavant*.
 Beggar, *n. mendiant, ante*.
 Begin, *v. a. commencer*.
 Behave, *v. n. se conduire*.
 Behold, *v. a. voir*.
 — *interj. voilà*.
 Bell, *n. cloche, f.*
 — in a house, *sonnette, f.*
 Belong, *v. n. appartenir*.

Below, *p. au-dessous de*, *adv. dessous.*

Besieged, *p. assiégé.*

Bestow, *v. a. donner, mettre.*

Betray, *v. a. trahir.*

Better, *adj. meilleur, re.*

— *adv. mieux.*

Bewitching, *adj. enchanteur, teresse.*

Big, *adj. gros, se.*

Bird, *n. oiseau, m.*

Bitter, *adj. amer, ère.*

Bitterly, *adv. amèrement.*

Black, *adj. noir, re.*

Blacksmith, *n. forgeron, m.*

Blade, *n. lame, f.*

Blame, *v. a. blamer.*

Blind, *n. store, m.*

— *adj. aveugle.*

Blood, *n. sang, m.*

Blow, *v. a. and n. souffler.*

— *n. coup, m.*

Blue, *adj. bleu, eue.*

Blunder, *n. bêtise, f. bévue, f.*

Boast, *v. n. se vanter.*

Boasted, *p. vanté.*

Boat, *n. bateau; m. canot, m.*

Bone, *n. os, m.*

— *of fish, arête, f.*

Book, *n. livre, m.*

Boot, *n. botte, f.*

Botany, *n. la botanique, f.*

Bought, *p. acheté.*

Bow, *v. a. and n. saluer.*

Box, *n. boîte, f.*

Boy, *n. enfant, m. garçon, m.*

— *at school, élève, m.*

Branch, *n. branche, f.*

Brave, *adj. brave.*

Bread, *n. pain, m.*

Breadth, *n. largeur, f.*

Break, *v. a. casser, rompre.*

— *to break off, rompre.*

Breakfast, *n. and v. n. déjeuner.*

Bride, *n. mariée, f.*

Bridegroom, *n. marié, m.*

Bridge, *n. pont, m.*

Bright, *adj. éclatant, lumineux.*

Brilliancy, *n. éclat, m.*

Brilliant, *adj. éclatant, brillant.*

Bring, *v. a. (of things,) apporter, (of persons,) amener.*

— *back, rapporter, ramener.*

Brisk, *adj. actif, ve; vif, ve.*

Briskly, *adv. vivement.*

Broad, *adj. large.*

— *daylight, grand jour.*

Broken, *p. cassé.*

Brother, *n. frère, m.*

Brought, *p. apporté, amené.*

Build, *v. a. bâtir.*

Building, *n. édifice, m.*

Built, *p. bâti.*

Bullet, *n. balle, f.*

Bullied, *p. taquiné.*

Bush, *n. buisson;*

bushes, broussailles, pl. f.

Business, *n. affaire, f.*

Bustling, *adj. actif, ve.*

But, *conj. mais.*

as a restrictive with verbs, ne

...que,—page 146.

Butter, *n. beurre, m.*

Butterfly, *n. papillon, m.*

Buy, *v. a. acheter.*

By, *prep. par.*

before part. pres. en.

— a certain time, pour.

By and bye, *adv. tout à l'heure.*

C.

Cake, *n. gâteau, m.*

Call, *v. a. and n. appeler.*

to awaken, éveiller.

to visit, passer chez, aller voir.

Calm, *adj. calme.*

Campaign, *n. campagne, f.*

Cannæ, *n. pri. Cannes.*

Capitally, *adv. à merveille.*

Care, *n. soin, m.*
 take care, *avoir soin, prendre garde.*
 Careful, *adj. soigneux, euse.*
 Carriage, *n. voiture, f.*
 Carried, *p. porté.*
 — on, *poursuivi.*
 Carry, *v. a. porter.*
 — over, *transporter.*
 — away, *emporter.*
 — on, *poursuivre.*
 Case, *n. cas, m. affaire, f.*
 Castle, *n. château, m.*
 Cat, *n. chat, m.*
 Catch, *v. a. attraper, surprendre.*
 — up, *rejoindre.*
 — a glimpse of, *entrevoir.*
 Caterpillar, *n. chenille, f.*
 Cattle, *n. bestiaux, m. pl. bétail, m. s.*
 Caught, *p. attrapé.*
 Cease, *v. n. cesser.*
 Cenobite, *n. cénobite, m.*
 Certain, *adj. certain.*
 — adv. *pour sûr.*
 Chain, *n. chaîne, f.*
 Chair, *n. chaise, f.*
 arm-chair, *fauteuil, m.*
 Chance, *n. hasard, m. chance, f.*
 Change, *n. changement, m.*
 — v. a. and *n. changer.*
 Character, *n. caractère, m.*
 Charge, *v. n. fondre sur, charger.*
 Charm, *n. charme, m. sortilège, m.*
 Cheat, *n. fourbe, m.*
 — v. a. and *n. voler, escroquer.*
 Cheerful, *adj. gai.*
 Cheerfulness, *n. vivacité, f.*
 gaieté, *f.*
 Cherry, *n. cerise, f.*
 Chicken, *n. poulet, m.*
 Chief, *n. chef, m.*
 — *adj. principal, premier.*
 Child, *n. enfant, m.*
 Children, *n. pl. enfants, m.*
 Chimney, *n. cheminée, f.*

Choke, *v. a. and n. étrangler.*
 Church, *n. église, f.*
 Churn, *n. baratte, f.*
 Cigar, *n. cigarette, m.*
 Circle, *n. cercle, m.*
 — (society,) *monde, m.*
 Circumference, *n. circonférence, f.*
 Circumstance, *n. circonstance, m.*
 City, *n. ville, f.*
 Civilized, *adj. civilisé.*
 Clear, *v. a. franchir.*
 — *adj. clair.*
 Cleave through, *v. a. fondre.*
 Clergy, *n. clergé, m.*
 Clergyman, *n. ecclésiastique, m.*
 curé, *m.*
 Clever, *adj. habile, adroit, spirituel, lle.*
 Cloak, *v. manteau, m.*
 Clock, *horloge, f.*
 Cloth, *n. drap, m. toile, f.*
 table-cloth, *nappe, f. couvert, m.*
 Clothes, *n. pl. habits, m.*
 Cloud, *n. nuage, m.*
 Coach, *n. diligence, f.*
 Coals, *n. pl. charbon, m.*
 Coat, *n. habit, m.*
 Coffee, *n. café, m.*
 Cold, *adj. froid.*
 to be cold, *avoir froid.*
 Collect, *v. a. rassembler, réunir.*
 — (thoughts,) *se recueillir.*
 Colour, *n. couleur, f.*
 Come, *v. n. venir.*
 — back, *revenir.*
 — in, *entrer.*
 — again, *revenir.*
 Comet, *n. comète, f.*
 Comfortable, *adj. bien.*
 — to make oneself, *s'arranger.*
 Command, *n. commandement, m.*
 ordre, *m.*
 Command, *v. a. and n. commander.*
 Commander, *n. commandant, m.*

Commission, *n.* brevet, *m.* *épau-
lottes*, *f.*
Commoners, *n. pl.* *le tiers état*, *m. s.*
Compel, *v. a.* *contraindre*.
Compete, *v. n.* *concourir*.
Compose oneself, *v. n.* *se composer*.
Composure, *n.* *aplomb*, *m.*
'omprise, *v. a.* *comprendre*.
Conceit, *n.* *suffisance*, *f.* *outrecui-
dance*, *f.*
Conceited, *adj.* *fat*.
Conceal, *v. a.* *cachier*.
Concern, *v. a.* *concerner*, *regarder*.
to be concerned, or concern
oneself, *se mettre en peine*.
Condemn, *v. a.* *condamner*.
Condition, *n.* *condition*, *f.*
Conduct, *n.* *conduite*, *f.* [*fédéré*].
Confederate, *n.* and *adj.* *con-
fess*, *v. a.* *avouer*.
Confused, *adj.* *confus*.
to be confused, *se troubler*.
consequence, *n.* *suite*, *f.*
in consequence, *en conséquence*.
Consideration, *n.* *considération*, *f.*
égards, *m. pl.*
Contending parties, *n. pl.* *les
parties belligérentes*, *les com-
battants*.
Contrary, *adj.* *contraire*.
on the contrary, *au contraire*.
Contrive, *v. n.* *savoir*, *trouver
moyen*.
Copy, *n.* *copie*, *f.*
Corn, *n.* *blé*, *m.*
Correspond, *v. n.* *correspondre*.
Correspondence, *n.* *correspond-
ance*.
Cotton, *n.* *coton*, *m.*
Cough, *n.* *toux*, *f.*
— *v. n.* *tousser*.
Counsel, *n.* *conseil*, *m.*
Countenance, *n.* *figure*, *f.* *phy-
sionomie*, *f.* *visage*, *m.*
Counterfeit, *v. a.* and *n.* *contre-
faire*.

Counterfeit blindness, lameness,
contrefaire l'aveugle, *le boiteux*.
Courteous, *adj.* *courtois*.
Crafty, *souple*, *rusé*.
Cream, *n.* *crème*, *f.*
Creation, *n.* *création*, *f.*
Creature, *n.* *créature*, *f.*
Creeping, *adj.* *rampant*, *grimpant*.
Crimea, *n. p.* *la Crimée*.
Cross, *v. a.* *traverser*, *parcourir*.
Cry, *n.* *cri*, *m.*
— *v. n.* *s'écrier*, *crier*.
to weep, *pleurer*.
Cultivated, *adj.* *cultivé*.
Cunning, *adj.* *rusé*.
Curious, *adj.* *curieux*, *euse*.
Curtain, *n.* *rideau*.
Custom, *n.* *usage*, *m.* *coutume*, *f.*
Cut, *v. a.* and *n.* *couper*.

D.

Dance, *v. n.* *danser*.
Dancing, *n.* *la danse*, *f.*
Dangerous, *adj.* *dangereux*.
Dark, *adj.* *obscur*, *sombre*.
Darkness, *n.* *obscurité*, *f.* *ténè-
bres*, *f. pl.*
Day, *n.* *jour*, *m.* *journée*, *f.*
Daybreak, *n.* *l'aube*, *f.* *l'aurore*, *f.*
le point du jour.
at daybreak, *au jour*.
Daylight, *n.* *jour*, *m.*
Dazzling, *adj.* *éblouissant*.
Dead, *adj.* *mort*.
Deaf, *adj.* *sourd*.
Deal (a great,) *beaucoup de*.
Dear, *adj.* *cher*; *adv.* *cher*.
Dearly, *adv.* (price,) *cher*; (affec-
tion,) *chèrement*.
Death, *n.* *la mort*, *f.*
to counterfeit, *faire*, *contre-
faire la mort*.
Deceitful, *adj.* *trompeur*, *euse*.

Deceive, *v. a. and n. tromper.*
 Deceived, *trompé.*
 Declare, *v. a. déclarer.*
 — *v. n. se déclarer.*
 Deed, *n. fait, m. coup, m.*
 Deep, *n. abîme, m.*
 — *adj. profond.*
 — *in sensation, vif vive.*
 Defeat, *n. défaite, f.*
 Delighted, *adj. enchanté.*
 Delightful, *adj. délicieux, euse.*
 Depth, *n. profondeur, f.*
 Deserted, *part. abandonné.*
 Designing, *intrigant.*
 Detached, *part. détaché.*
 Detailed, *part. détaillé.*
 Detest, *v. a. détester.*
 Devotion, *n. dévotion, f.*
 Dictionary, *n. dictionnaire, m.*
 Did, *aux. pret. of do, sign of a past tense, generally interrogative or negative, pres. of avoir or of être, according to the verb.*
 Die, *a. n. mourir.*
 Different, *adj. différent.*
 Differently, *adv. différemment.*
 Difficult, *adj. difficile.* [m.]
 Difficulty, *n. difficulté, f. embarras,*
 Dignity, *n. dignité, f.*
 Dine, *v. n. dîner.*
 Dinner, *n. dîner, m.*
 — *to be at dinner, dîner.*
 Dint, *by—of, à force de.*
 Direction, *n. direction, f. sens, m. chemin, m. adresse, f.*
 Directly, *adv. tout de suite.*
 Dirty, *adj. sale.*
 Disappear, *v. n. disparaître.*
 Discipline, *n. discipline, f.*
 Discourse, *v. n. discourir.*
 — *n. discours, m.*
 Discover, *v. a. découvrir, surprendre.*
 Dish, *n. plat, m.*

Dislike, *v. a. ne pas aimer, avoir en aversion, de l'aversion pour.*
 Dislike, *n. aversion, f.*
 Disobey, *v. a. désobéir, v. n.*
 Disown, *v. a. méconnaître, désavouer, disconvenir, v. n.*
 Disposition, *n. nature, f.*
 Distance, *n. distance, f. lointain, m. from a distance, de loin. in the distance, au loin, dans le lointain.*
 Dizzy, *adj. vertigineux, euse.*
 Do, *v. a. and n. faire, v. a. also the sign of pres. tense ; an auxiliary in English.*
 — *interj. donc.*
 Doctor, *n. docteur, m.*
 — *medical, médecin.*
 Domain, *n. domaine, m.*
 Done, *part. fait.*
 Door, *n. porte, f.*
 — *church-door, porte de l'église. carriage-door, portière, f.*
 Down, *adv. en bas.*
 — *lowered, baissé.*
 — *after English verbs, to be implied by simple French verbs, as— come, go-down, descendre ; lay down, déposer.*
 Dreadful, *adj. affreux, euse*
 Dream, *n. rêve, m. songe, m.*
 — *v. a. and n. rêver, songer.*
 Dress, *n. habillement, m. toilette, f.*
 — *v. a. habiller, vêtir.*
 — *v. n. s'habiller, se mettre.*
 Dressed, *part. mis mise.* [mener.]
 Drive (horses), *v. a. conduire, — away, chasser.*
 Drunkenness, *n. ivresse, f.*
 Dry, *adj. sec, sèche.*
 — *v. a. sécher.*
 — *v. n. se sécher.*
 Due, *part. dû dûe.*
 Dust, *n. poussière, f.*

Duty, *n.* *devoir*, *m.*
 Dwelling, *n.* *habitation*, *f.* *de-*
meure, *f.*
 Dye, *v. a.* *teindre*.

E.

Eager, *adj.* *avide*, *pressé*.
 Early, *adv.* *de bonne heure*.
 very early, *de très-bonne heure*.
 — *adj.* *premier*.
 — *in morning*, *matinal*.
 Earth, *n.* *terre*, *f.*
 Easily, *adv.* *facilement*.
 Easy, *adj.* *facile*.
 — *(in mind.)* *tranquille*.
 Eat, *v. a. and n.* *manger*.
 Eccentricity, *n.* *extravagance*, *f.*
 excentricité, *f.*
 Effort, *n.* *effort*, *m.*
 Egg, *n.* *œuf*, *m.*
 Eight, *adj.* *huit*.
 Elegant, *adj.* *élégant*.
 Eloquent, *adj.* *éloquent*.
 Else, *adj.* *autres*.
 anything else, *autre chose*.
 something else, *autre chose*.
 nothing else, *pas autre chose*,
 plus rien.
 elsewhere, *ailleurs*.
 somewhere else, *ailleurs*.
 Embrace, *v. a.* *embrasser*.
 — *v. n.* *s'embrasser*.
 Emergency, *n.* *extrémité*, *f.*
 Emotion, *n.* *émotion*, *f.* *trouble*, *m.*
 Emperor, *n.* *Empereur*, *m.*
 Empire, *n.* *empire*, *m.*
 Empress, *n.* *Impératrice*, *f.*
 Enchant, *v. a.* *enchanter*.
 Enchanting, *adj.* *enchanteur*,
 teresse,
 Encourage, *v. a.* *encourager*.
 End, *n.* *fin*, *f.* *bout*, *m.*
 (object.) *but*, *m.*

Enemy, *n.* *ennemi*.
 Engineer, *n.* *ingénieur*.
 English, *adj.* *Anglais*, *se.*
 — *n.* *Anglais*, *m.*
 Englishman, *n.* *Anglais*, *m.*
 Englishwoman, *n.* *Anglaise*, *f.*
 Enjoy, *v. a.* *jouir*, *v. n.* *(governs*
 gen. de.)
 to enjoy oneself, *s'amuser*, *se*
 divertir.
 Enraged, *part.* *irrité*, *courroucé*.
 Enterprise, *n.* *entreprise*, *f.*
 Entertain, *v. a.* *entretenir*.
 Entrust, *v. a.* *confier*.
 Epaulette, *n.* *épaulette*, *f.*
 Escape, *v. n.* *échapper*, *s'échapper*.
 Eternal, *adj.* *éternel*, *elle*.
 Even, *adv.* *même*.
 even if, *even though*, *quand*
 même, *(governs conditional.)*
 Evening, *n.* *soir*, *m.* *soirée*, *f.*
 Everlasting, *adj.* *éternel*, *elle*.
 Every, *adj.* *tout le*, *toute la*, *tous*
 les, *toutes les*. [*monde.*
 every one, *everybody*, *tout le*
 everything, *tout*.
 everywhere, *partout*.
 Evident, *adj.* *evident*.
 Evil, *n.* *mal*, *m.* *fléau*, *m.* *incon-*
 véniént, *m.*
 — *adj.* *mauvais*, *e*; *méchant*.
 Examine, *v. a.* *examiner*.
 Exceedingly, *adj.* *beaucoup*, *ex-*
 cessivement.
 Execrably, *adj.* *exécrablement*,
 affreusement.
 Excuse, *n.* *excuse*, *f.*
 — *v. a.* *excuser*.
 Excused, *part.* *dispensé*.
 Exercise, *n.* *exercice*, *m.*
 — *at school*, *devoir*, *m.* *thème*, *m.*
 Exhibit, *v. a.* *exposer*, *montrer*.
 Expect, *v. a.* *attendre*; *s'atten-*
 dre, *v. n.* *(governs dative of*
 nouns and pronouns, sub-
 jective of verbs.)

Expense, *n. frais*, *m. pl. dépense*, *f.*
at the expense of, *aux dépens*
de.
Expensive, *adj. coûteux*, *euse*.
Explain, *v. a. expliquer*.
Exploit, *n. exploit*, *m.*
Express, *v. a. exprimer*.
Expressive, *adj. expressif*, *ive*.
Extensive, *adj. étendu*, *m.*
Extinct, *adj. éteint*.
Extinguish, *v. a. éteindre*.
Extortioner, *n. concussionnaire*, *m.*
Eye, *n. œil*, *m.* ; *pl. yeux*.

F.

Face, *n. figure*, *f. visage*, *m. face*, *f.*
— *v. a. braver*, (to face about,) *faire volte face*.
Fact, *n. fait*, *m.*
Fail, *v. n. manquer*, *échouer*.
Faint, *adj. léger*, *ère*.
— *v. n. s'évanouir*.
Fair, *adj. juste*.
in complexion, *blond*.
beautiful, *beau*, *belle*.
Faithful, *adj. fidèle*.
Fall, *n. chute*, *f.*
— *v. n. tomber*.
to fall to the share of, *revenir*,
échoir.
False, *adj. faux* *fausse*.
Fame, *n. gloire*, *f. renommée*, *f.*
Famished, *adj. affamé*.
Famously, *adv. joliment*.
Fanciful, *adj. fantasque*.
Fancy, *n. fantaisie*, *f.*
— *v. a. se figurer*, *s'imaginer*.
— *interj. par exemple ! quelle*
idée ! n'est-ce pas drôle ?
Far, *adj. éloigné*.
— *adv. loin*.
far off, *bien loin*.
as far as, *jusqu'à*.

Fashion, *n. mode*, *f.*
Fat, *adj. gros* *grosse* ; *gras* *grasse*.
Father, *n. père*, *m.*
Fatigue, *n. fatigue*, *f.*
Fatigued, *part. fatigué*.
Fault, *n. faute*, *f.*
in a person, *défaut*, *m.*
at fault, *en défaut*.
Fear, *n. crainte*, *f. peur*, *f.*
Feared, *part. craint*.
Fearless, *adj. intrépide*.
Fed, *part. nourri*.
Feed, *v. a. nourrir*.
— *v. n. se nourrir*.
Feel, *v. a. sentir*.
— *v. n. se sentir*, *se ressentir de*.
Feeling, *n. sentiment*.
Feign, *v. a. feindre*.
Fence, *n. enclos*, *m. clôture*, *f.*
enceinte, *f.*
Fencing, *n. l'escrime*, *f. les*
armes, *f. pl.*
Fetch, *v. a. chercher*, *prendre*.
Feudal, *adj. féodal*.
Few, *adj. rare*, *peu de*, *adv.*
Fiddle, *n. violon*, *m.*
Fiddler, *n. violon*, *m.*
Field, *n. champ*, *m.*
Fierce, *adj. féroce*, *furieux*, *euse*.
Fifteen num. *adj. quinze*.
Fight, *v. n. se battre*.
— *v. n. a battle*, *livrer bataille*.
Figure, *n. forme*, *f. personnage*.
the shape of a person, *taille*, *f.*
tournure, *f.*
a nice figure, *une jolie taille*,
une tournure charmante.
a fine figure, *une belle taille*.
Find, *v. a. trouver*.
to find it dull—slow, *s'ennuyer*.
to find fault with, *reprendre*,
trouver à redire.
Fine, *adj. fin*.
— *handsome*, *beau*, *belle*.
Finger, *n. doigt*, *m.*
Finish, *v. a. achever*, *finir*, *a. & n*

Fire, *n. feu*, *m.*
 First, *adj. premier*.
 — *adv. premièrement, d'abord, le premier, en avant.*
 Fish, *n. poisson*, *m.*
 — *v. n. pêcher.*
 Fisherman, *n. pêcheur*, *m.*
 Fishing, *n. la pêche*, *f.*
 Fit, *adj. propre, convenable.*
 — *v. n. aller, convenir.*
 Fitting (to be,) *falloir*.
 it is fitting, *il faut*.
 it was fitting, *il fallait*.
 Flame, *n. flamme*, *f.*
 Flatter, *v. a. and n. flatter*.
 Flattering, *adj. flatteur, euse*.
 Flea, *n. puce*, *f.*
 Fleet, *n. flotte*, *f.*
 Float, *v. n. nager, flotter*.
 Flood, *n. inondation, f. déluge, m.*
 Flow, *v. n. couler*.
 Flower, *n. fleur*, *f.*
 Fly, *n. mouche*, *f.*
 — *v. n. voler*.
 Flute, *n. flûte*, *f.*
 Folly, *n. folie*, *f.*
 Follow, *v. a. and n. suivre*.
 — *v. a. poursuivre*.
 Following, *part. suivant*.
 Food, *n. nourriture*, *f.*
 Fool, *n. imbécile*, *m.*
 Foot, *n. pied*, *m.*
 For, *prep. pour*.
 — *conj. car*.
 — *me to—for him to, &c. pour-que je, pour qu'il, (with sub-junctive.)*
 Forbid, *v. a. défendre, interdire*.
 Force, *n. force*, *f.*
 Forced, *part. forcé*.
 Forcibly, *adv. vivement*.
 Forged, *part. forgé*.
 Forget, *v. a. and n. oublier*.
 Fortune, *n. fortune*, *f.*
 Fortunate, *adj. heureux, euse*.
 Fought, *part. livré, donné*.

Four, *num. adj. quatre*.
 Fowl, *n. oiseau*, *m.*
 France, *n. pr. la France*, *f.*
 Francis, *n. pr. François*.
 Free, *adj. libre*.
 free from, *exempt, dispensé*.
 Freeze, *v. a. and n. geler*.
 French, *adj. Français*.
 French, *n. Français*, *m.*
 Frenchman, *un Français*, *m.*
 Frenchwoman, *une Française*, *f.*
 Frequent, *adj. fréquent*.
 Friday, *n. Vendredi*.
 Friend, *n. ami*, *m. amie*, *f.*
 Friendly, *ami amie*.
 Fruit, *n. fruit*, *m.*
 Fugitive, *n. fuyard*.
 Fun, *n. plaisir, m. gaieté, f. amusement, m.*
 to have fun, *s'amuser*.
 Furniture, *n. meubles*, *m. pl.*
 a piece of furniture, *un meuble*, *m.*

G.

Gain, *n. le gain*.
 — *v. a. gagner, se ménager*.
 Gallery, *n. galerie*, *f.*
 Galley, *n. galère*, *f.*
 Galop, *n. galop*, *m.*
 — *v. n. galoper*.
 Garden, *n. jardin*, *m.*
 Gardener, *n. jardinier*, *m.*
 Gather, *v. a. cueillir*.
 General, *n. général*, *m.*
 — *adj. général, ale*.
 Generally, *adj. généralement*.
 Generous, *adj. généreux, euse*.
 Genius, *n. génie*, *m.*
 Gentle, *adj. doux douce*.
 Gentleman, *n. Monsieur*, *m.*
 Messieurs, *m. pl.*
 Geometry, *n. géométrie*, *f.*

German, *adj. and n. Allemand.*
 Germany, *n. pr. Allemagne, f.*
 Get, *v. a. avoir, procurer, recevoir.*
 — for oneself, *se procurer, se*
 — better, *v. n. guérir. [ménager.*
 — cold, *se refroidir.*
 — (health,) *s'enrhummer.*
 — into, *entrer dans.*
 — old, *vieillir.*
 — through, *passer.*
 — up, *se lever.*
 — young, *rajeunir.*
 — somewhere, *se trouver.*
 Girl, *n. fille, f.*
 Give, *v. a. donner.*
 — away, *donner.*
 — back—back again, *rendre.*
 Glad, *adj. aise, content.*
 Gladness, *n. allégresse, f. joie, f.*
 Glass, *n. verre, m.*
 Glorious, *adj. glorieux, grand.*
 Go, *v. n. aller.*
 — away, *s'en aller, partir.*
 — in, *entrer.*
 — out, *sortir.*
 — up, *monter.*
 — down, *descendre.*
 — up again, *remonter.*
 — over, *parcourir.*
 — across, *traverser.*
 — in for, *concourir, se présenter.*
 — out, as fire, *s'éteindre.*
 — mad, *devenir fou.*
 — to bed, *se coucher.*
 — near, *approcher.*
 Gold, *n. or, m.*
 Gone, *part. parti.*
 — out (of fire,) *éteint.*
 Good, *adj. bon bonne.*
 of behaviour, *sage.*
 to be as good as, *valoir.*
 a good man, *un brave homme,*
 un homme de bien.
 in good time, *à temps.*
 good people, *de braves gens, de*
 bonnes personnes.

Good, *n. bien.*
 to do good, *faire le bien, du*
 bien.
 Goods, *n. pl. des' biens, m. des*
 effets, m.
 Grand, *adj. superbe, grand, gran-*
 Grass, *n. herbe, f. [dièse.*
 Great, *adj. grand.*
 a great deal, *beaucoup, bien.*
 Greater, *plus grand.*
 Grecian, *adj. Grec Grecque.*
 Greedy, *adj. gourmand.*
 Greek, *adj. and n. Grec Grecque.*
 — fire, *feu Grégeois.*
 Green, *adj. vert.*
 Grey, *adj. gris.*
 Groan, *v. n. gémir.*
 Grow, *v. n. grandir.*
 of plants, *pousser, naître.*
 — pale, *pâler.*
 — weak, *s'affaiblir.*
 Guard, *n. garde, f.*
 Guardsman, *n. garde, m.*
 Guide, *n. guide, m.*
 Guilty, *adj. coupable.*
 Guinea, *n. guinée, f.*
 Gun, *n. fusil, m.*
 (cannon,) *canon, m.*
 Gurgle, *v. n. bouillonner.*

H.

Habit, *n. habitude, f.*
 Hair, *n. cheveu, m. generally*
 used in the plural, les
 cheveux, m. pl.
 Half, *n. moitié, f.*
 — *adj. demi demie.*
 — an hour, *une demi heure.*
 an hour and a half, *une heure*
 et demie.
 — *adv. à demi, à moitié.*
 Hallo, *interj. tiens, tenez.*
 Hammer, *n. marteau, m.*

- Hand**, *n.* *main*, *f.* *aiguille*, *f.*
Handkerchief, *n.* *mouchoir*, *m.*
Handle, *n.* *manche*, *m.* *poignée*, *f.*
Hannibal, *n.* *pr. Annibal*.
Happy, *adj.* *heureux*, *se.*
Hard, *adj.* *dur*, *difficile*.
Hardly, *adv.* *guère*, *à peine*.
Hardworking, *adj.* *laborieux*.
Harvest, *n.* *moisson*, *f.* *récolte*, *f.*
Haste, *n.* *hâte*, *f.* *empressement*, *m.*
précipitation.
to make haste, *se dépêcher*.
Hasten, *v. a.* *hâter*.
— v. n. *se hâter*, *se dépêcher*.
— obligingly, *s'empresse*.
Hat, *n.* *chapeau*, *m.*
Hatchet, *n.* *hache*, *f.*
Have, *v. a.* *avoir*.
to have just, *venir de....*
to have to, *devoir*, *falloir*.
he, you, had to, il, vous, a
fallu ; il a fallu que vous,
qu'il.....
to have fun, *s'amuser*.
Hay, *n.* *foin*, *m.*
He, *pron.* *lui* ; *il as nom. to verbs*.
Head, *n.* *tête*, *f.*
headache, *mal de tête*, *m.*
Health, *n.* *santé*, *f.*
Healthy, *adj.* *sain*.
Hear, *v. a.* and *n.* *entendre*.
— v. a. *apprendre*.
Heard, *part.* *entendu*, *appris*.
Heart, *n.* *cœur*, *m.*
by heart, *par cœur*.
Heat, *n.* *chaleur*, *f.*
Height, *n.* *hauteur*, *f.* *taille*, *f.*
Held, *part.* *tenu*.
Helmet, *n.* *casque*, *m.*
Help, *v. a.* *secourir*, *servir*.
Hen, *poule*, *f.*
Hence, *adv.* *d'ici*.
Henceforth, *adv.* *désormais*.
Herb, *n.* *herbe*, *f.*
Herd, *n.* *troupeau*, *m.*
Here, *adv.* *ici*.
- Here is**, *voici*.
Hero, *n.* *héros*, *m.*
Heroic, *adj.* *héroïque*.
Heroism, *n.* *héroïsme*, *m.*
Heroine, *n.* *héroïne*, *f.*
High, *adj.* *haut*, *élevé*.
— road, *grande route*.
— spirited, *fougueux*.
Him, *pron. acc.* *le* ; *dat.* *lui* ;
after prepositions, *lui*.
Himself, *lui même*.
Hinder, *v. a.* *empêcher*, *gêner*.
Hindrance, *n.* *embarras*, *m.*
His, *adj. poss.* *son*, *sa*, *ses*, — *p. 26*
— pron. poss. *le sien*, *la sienne*,
page 29.
History, *n.* *histoire*, *f.*
Hit, *v. a.* *atteindre*, *frapper*.
— part. *atteint*.
Hoax, *n.* *canard*, *m.*
Hold, *v. a.* *tenir*.
— up, *soutenir*.
— back, *retenir*.
Hole, *n.* *trou*, *m.*
Holy, *adj.* *saint*.
Home, *n.* *demeure*, *f.*
(country), *patrie*, *f.* *pays*, *m.*
Honest, *adj.* *honnête*, *intègre*.
Honesty, *n.* *probité*, *f.*
Honey, *n.* *miel*, *m.*
Honour, *n.* *honneur*, *m.*
Horse, *n.* *cheval*, *m.*
Horseman, *n.* *cavalier*, *m.*
Hot, *adj.* *chaud*.
Hour, *adj.* *heure*, *f.*
House, *n.* *maison*, *f.*
at the house of...chez... prep.
at my, your, his house, *chez*
moi, vous, lui.
at my Tutor's, *chez mon pré-*
cepteur.
at Mr. Morris', *chez Monsieur*
Morris. [*ger.*]
at the baker's, *chez le boulan-*
How, *adv. interrog.* *comment* ?
— adv. adm. *comme* !

How much, how long ? *combien ?*
 Hundred, *num. adj. cent.*
 Hunger, *n. faim, f.*
 Hungry, *adj. affamé.*
 to be hungry, *avoir faim.*
 Hurried, *part. pressé, précipité.*
 Hurry, *n. empressement, m. précipitation, f.*
 — *v. a. and n. précipiter.*
 Hurt, *v. a. blesser.*
 — *v. n. faire mal.*
 (injure,) *nuire.*

I.

Ice, *n. glace, f.*
 Idle, *adj. paresseux, se.*
 Idle word, *oiseux.*
 Idleness, *n. paresse, f.*
 Ignominy, *n. ignominie, f.*
 Ill, *adj. malade.*
 — *adv. mal.*
 — used, *part. malmené.*
 Immediately, *adj. aussitôt, immédiatement.*
 Immense, *adj. immense.*
 Immensely, *adv. immensément.*
 Imperturbable, *adj. inébranlable.*
 In, *prep. en, dans.*
 — France, *en France.*
 — England, *en Angleterre.*
 — a town, *à.*
 — London, *à Londres.*
 — the sun, *au soleil.*
 — order to... *afin de.*
 — vain, *vainement.*
 to do anything in vain, *avoir beau faire quelquechose.*
 — *adv. dedans.*
 Inclination, *n. disposition, f. penchant, m.*
 Inconvenient, *adj. incommode, gênant.*
 to be inconvenient, *gêner.*

India, *n. pr. Inde, f. les Indes, f.*
 Indignant, *adj. indigné.*
 Indisposed, *adj. indisposé.*
 Indomitable, *adj. indomptable.*
 Induce, *v. a. engager.*
 Industry, *n. industrie, f.*
 Infringe, *v. a. enfreindre.*
 Ingenious, *adj. ingénieux, se.*
 Inhabitable, *adj. habitable.*
 Inhabitant, *n. habitant, n.*
 Iniquity, *n. iniquité, f.*
 Injure, *v. a. nuire, v. n. governs dative.*
 Injury, *n. tort, m.*
 to do an injury, *nuire.*
 Ink, *n. encre, f.*
 Innocent, *adj. innocent.*
 Innumerable, *adj. innombrable.*
 Insatiable, *adj. insatiable.*
 Insect, *n. insecte, m.*
 Inspect, *v. a. inspecter.*
 Instantly, *adv. à l'instant.*
 Institution, *n. institution, f. [m.]*
 Intention, *n. intention, f. dessein,*
 Intentionally, *adv. à dessein.*
 Intercourse, *n. commence, m.*
 Interest, *n. intérêt, m.*
 — *v. a. intéresser.*
 to interest oneself, or take interest, be interested, *s'intéresser.*
 Interfere, *v. n. intervenir.*
 Interference, *n. intervention, f.*
 Interruption, *n. interruption, f.*
 Into, *prep. en, dans.*
 Introduce, (socially,) *v. présenter.*
 — (materially,) *introduire.*
 Invent, *v. a. and n. inventer.*
 Invention, *n. invention, f.*
 Invest, *v. investir.*
 Invested, *part. investi.*
 It, *pron. nom. il, elle—p. 29.*
 ce—p. 150.
 — acc. *le, la ; nom. and acc. neuter, cela.*
 Ivy, *herbe, m.*

J.

- Jew, *adj.* and *n.* *Juif, ive.*
 Jewess, *n.* *Juive.*
 John, *n. pr.* *Jean.*
 Join, *v. a.* *joindre, unir, réunir.*
 — *v. n.* *se réunir.*
 to meet again, *rejoindre.*
 Journey, *n.* *voyage, m. route, f.*
 chemin, m.
 Joy, *n.* *joie, f.*
 Judgment, *n.* *jugement, m.*
 Just, *adj.* *juste.*
 — *adv.* *seulement.*

K.

- Keep, *v. a.* *garder.*
 — *up, entretenir.*
 Keeper, *n.* *gardien, m.*
 — (game-) *garde-chasse, m.*
 Kind, *n.* *genre, m.*
 Kind, *adj.* *bon, ne; aimable; obligeant.*
 Kindness, *n.* *bonté, f. obligeance, f. complaisance, f.*
 Kill, *v. a.* *tuer.*
 Killed, *part.* *tué.*
 King, *n.* *roi, m.*
 Kingdom, *n.* *royaume, m.*
 Kitten, *n.* *jeune chat, m.*
 Knave, *n.* *coquin, m. fripon, m. maraud, m.*
 Knavish, *adj.* *fripon, onne; scélé-rat, ate.*
 Knife, *n.* *couteau, m.*
 Knight, *n.* *chevalier, m.*
 Knot, *n.* *nœud, m.*
 Knowing, *adj.* *adroit, fin, matois.*

L.

- Lace, *n.* *dentelle, f.*
 Lady, *n.* *dame, f.*
 Ladder, *n.* *échelle, f.*
 Lamb, *n.* *agneau, m.*
 Land, *n.* *terre, f.*
 Language, *n.* (the particular language of a country,) *langue, f.*
 (mode of uttering an expression,) *langage, m.*
 Last, *adj.* *dernier, ère.*
 Late, *adv.* *tard.*
 Lately, *adv.* *dernièrement.*
 Latin, *adj.* and *n.* *Latin.*
 Laurel, *n.* *laurier, m.*
 Law, *n.* *loi, f.*
 Lay, *v. a.* *coucher.*
 — eggs, *pondre.*
 — a cloth, *mettre un couvert, une nappe, une table.*
 Lead, *v. a.* *conduire, mener.*
 Leaf, *n.* *feuille, f.*
 League, *n.* *lieue, f.*
 Learn, *v. a.* and *n.* *apprendre, savoir.*
 Learned, *part.* *instruit.*
 Learning, *n.* *instruction, f.*
 Least, *adj.* *moindre.*
 — *adv.* *moins.*
 at least, *au moins, du moins.*
 Leave, *v. a.* *laisser.*
 to go away from, *v. a.* *quitter.*
 — *v. n.* *partir.*
 Left, *adj.* *gauche.*
 to the left, *à gauche.*
 — *part.* *délaissé, abandonné.*
 Lend, *v. a.* *prêter.*
 Length, *n.* *longueur, f.*
 Less, *adj.* *moindre, plus petit.*
 — *adv.* *moins.*

Lesser, *moindre*.
 Lesson, *n. leçon, f.*
 Lest, *adv. à moins que.*
 after a verb governing sub-
 junctive, *que.*
 Let (sign of imperative,)—see
 imperative of verbs.
 Letter, *n. lettre, f.*
 Lie, *n. mensonge, m.*
 Lie, *v. n. se coucher.*
 falsify, *v. n. mentir.*
 Life, *n. vie, f.*
 Light, *n. lumière, f.*
 — *adj. (visible,) clair, re.*
 — in weight, *léger, ère.*
 Lightness, *n. légèreté, f.*
 Lightning, *n. la foudre, f. un*
 éclair, m.
 Like, *adj. semblable, pareil, eille.*
 — *adv. comme.*
 — that, *ainsi.*
 Like, *v. a. aimer, vouloir.*
 Line, *n. ligne, f.*
 Listen, *v. n. écouter, v. a.*
 Literature, *n. littérature, f.*
 Little, *adj. petit.*
 a little fellow, *un pauvre petit.*
 — *adv. (noun) un peu.*
 Live, *v. n. vivre.*
 to dwell at, *demeurer.*
 Live, *adj. vivant.*
 Loaf, *n. pain, m.*
 Lock, *n. serrure, f.*
 Lodging, *n. logement, m.*
 Lofty, *adj. superbe, altier.*
 Log, *n. buche, f.*
 Lonely, *adj. isolé.*
 Long, *adj. long longue.*
 — *adv. longtemps.*
 Longer, *adv. plus longtemps.*
 any longer, *davantage.*
 Look, *n. regard.*
 appearance, *air, m. mine, f.*
 Look, *v. n. regarder.*
 to look at, *v. a. regarder,*
 to look for, *chercher.*

Look over, *parcourir.*
 to seem, *v. n. avoir l'air, paraî-*
 Lord, *n. seigneur, m.* [*tre.*]
 Lordly, *adj. seigneurial.*
 Lose, *v. a. perdre.*
 Lost, *part. perdu.*
 Love, *n. amour, m.*
 — *v. a. and n. aimer.*
 Louis d'or, *Louis d'or, m.*
 Low, *adj. bas base, ignoble.*

M.

Mad, *adj. fou folle, extravagant.*
 Made, *part. fait.*
 Madman, *n. fou, m.*
 Madwoman, *n. folle, f.*
 Magistrate, *n. magistrat, m.*
 Maintain, *v. a. maintenir, faire*
 vivre.
 Maintenance, *n. entretien, m.*
 Make, *v. a. faire.*
 — *v. n. rendre.*
 — a mistake, *se tromper.*
 — any one's appearance, *paraî-*
 — haste, *se dépêcher.* [*tre.*]
 Malefactor, *n. malfaiteur, m.*
 Man, *n. homme, m.*
 — in general terms, *l'homme,*
 m. pl. les hommes.
 Manage, *v. a. conduire.*
 — *v. n. trouver moyen, savoir,*
 pouvoir.
 Mankind, *n. le genre humain, m.*
 l'humanité, f.
 Manner, *n. manière, f. mœurs,*
 f. pl.
 Many, *adj. beaucoup de.*
 — *adv. many a... many an ..*
 maint, mainte, ts, tes.
 Mark, *n. marque, f. signe, m.*
 aim, *but, m.*
 Married, *part. marié.*

Marry, *v. a. épouser.*
 to give, join people in marriage, *mariage, marier.*
Mathematics, *n. pl. les mathématiques, f. pl.*
Matter, *n. matière, f.*
 a matter, a concern, *une affaire, f.*
Matter, in phrases with *be* and *have*, unexpressed in French.
 Have something the matter, *avoir quelque chose.*
 something to be the matter, *y avoir quelque chose.*
 what is the matter with you? *qu'avez vous?*
 there is, he has something the matter with him, *il a quelque chose.*
 what is the matter? *qu' y a-t-il?* there is nothing the matter, *il n'y a rien.*
Meadow, *n. prairie, f.*
Meal, *n. repas, m.*
Mean, *adj. mesquin, petit.*
 — *v. a. signifier, vouloir dire.*
Meaning, *n. sens, m.*
Means, *n. pl. moyen, m.*
Measles, *n. pl. la rougeole, f.*
Measure, *n. mesure, f.*
 — *v. a. mesurer.*
Meat, *n. viande, f.*
Meet, *v. a. rencontrer.*
 — with, *rencontrer.*
 to go and meet, *aller au devant, aller à la rencontre de...*
 — *v. n. se rencontrer.*
 — in society, *voir.*
Meeting, *n. rencontre, f.*
 collection of persons, *assemblée, f. réunion, f.*
Melt, *v. n. fondre.*
 — *v. a. faire fondre.*
Melted, *part. fondu.*
Merry, *adj. joyeux, euse. [sion, f.]*
Message, *n. message, m. commis-*

Metal, *n. métal, m.*
Middle, *n. milieu, m.*
Mile, *n. mille, m.*
 to walk, to go a mile, *faire un mille.*
Military, *adj. militaire.*
Milk, *n. lait, m.*
Mincing, *adj. mignard.*
Minister, *n. ministre, m.*
Minute, *n. minute, f.*
 — *adj. minutieux.*
Minutely, *adj. minutieusement.*
Misled, *part. séduit, égaré.*
Miss, *v. a. manquer.*
Mistake, *v. faute, f. erreur, f.*
bêtise, f.
 — *v. a. méprendre.*
v. n. to make a mistake, to be mistaken, se tromper.
Mister, *Monsieur.*
Mistress, *n. maîtresse, f.*
 (appel.) *Madame.*
Mixture, *n. mélange, m.*
Moan, *v. n. gémir.*
Moist, *adj. humide.*
Monarch, *n. monarque, m.*
Money, *n. argent, m.*
Monkey, *n. singe, m.*
Moon, *n. lune, f.*
More, *adv. davantage.*
 — adverb of comparison, *plus.*
 any more? *encore?*
 no more, not any more, *plus.*
 no more... (of anything,) *plus de.....*
 more than, (above, beyond,) *plus de; (comparison,) plus que.*
Most, *adv. (of compar.) le plus.*
Mournful, *adj. triste.*
Moved, *adj. ému.*
Much, *adv. beaucoup, beaucoup de.*
 — more, *beaucoup plus.*
Mustard, *n. moutarde, f.*
Mutter, *v. a. murmurer.*
Mutton, *n. mouton, m.*

Murmur, *n. murmure, m.*
My, *adj. pron. mon, ma, mes—p.26.*

N.

Name, *n. nom, m.*
Narrative, *n. récit, m.*
Nation, *n. nation, f. peuple, m.*
Nature, *n. nature, f.*
Naughty, *adj. méchant, mauvais.*
Near, *adj. proche.*
— *adv. près.*
— *prep. près de....*
Nearly, *adv. presque.*
Need, *n. besoin, m.*
Needful, *adj. nécessaire.*
Needle, *n. aiguille, f.*
Needy, *adj. besogneux.*
Neighbourhood, *n. voisinage, m.*
— *environs, m. pl.*
Never, *adv. jamais.*
— *in connection with verbs, ne jamais.*
— *he never sleeps, il ne dort jamais.*
New, *adj. (just made,) neuf, ve.*
— *comparatively new, nouveaux, velle.*
— *a new hat, un chapeau neuf.*
— *a new master, un nouveau maître.*
News, *n. pl. nouvelle, f. nouvelles.*
Newspaper, *n. journal, m. [f. pl]*
Next, *adj. prochain.*
— *adv. après, ensuite.*
Nice, *adj. gentil, ille ; aimable.*
Night, *n. nuit, f.*
— *last night, cette nuit.*
Nightgown, *n. chemise de nuit, f.*
No, *adj. aucun, nul nulle.*
— *(ne to precede the verb these adjectives are used with.)*

In negative sentences, *no* is generally rendered by *ne* before the verb and *pas* after, in all parts but the infinitive, when *ne pas* keep together.

admit no strangers, *n'admettez pas d'étrangers.*

I have no friends, *je n'ai pas d'amis.*

Nobody, no one, *personne, adv.*

No more, *plus ; plus de.*

No, *adv. neg. non.*

Noise, *n. bruit, m. éclat, m.*

Noisy, *adj. tapageur, euse.*

None, *pron. neg. aucun.*

Not, *adv. neg. non pas.*

—, a negation used with verbs, *ne* before the verb, *pas* after.

I do not understand, *je ne comprends pas.*

let us not go yet, *ne partons pas encore.*

(If negative verbs govern nouns in the accusative, the preposition *de* is used, instead of the indefinite or the partitive article.)

he eats no bread ; I do not drink wine, *il ne mange pas de pain ; je ne bois pas de vin.*

Nothing, *adv. rien.*

(if connected with a verb, *ne* to precede.)

I see nothing, *je ne vois rien.*

nothing more, *plus rien.*

he wants nothing more, *il ne demande plus rien.*

Notice, *n. avis, m.*

Now, *adv. à présent, maintenant.*

— *interj. donc.*

O.

- Obey, *v. a. and n. obéir* ; *v. n.*
governs dative.
- Observe, *v. a. observer.*
- Obstacle, *n. obstacle, m.*
- Obstinacy, *n. entêtement, m.*
- Occasion, *n. occasion, f.*
- Occupy, *v. a. occuper.*
- Of, *prep. de.*
- Offend, *v. a. offenser, blesser.*
- Offended, *part. blessé.*
- Offer, *v. a. offrir.*
- Office, *n. charge, f. emploi, m.*
- Officer, *n. officier, m.*
- Old, *adj. vieux vieille* ; *agé.*
- On, *prep. sur.*
to be omitted, before names
of days : *viz.*
on Tuesday, *Mardi.*
on Tuesdays, *les Mardis.*
- Once, *adv. une fois.*
- One, *adj. un une.*
— *pron. on*, (in the sense of
people.)
— another, *pron. l'un l'autre.*
— *se, nous, vous*, the verbs go-
verning one another, are
translated into French by a
reflective.
they love one another, *ils s'ai-*
ment l'un l'autre.
they hurt one another, *ils se*
blesent les uns les autres.
we tell one another truths,
nous nous disons des vérités.
(*l'un, l'autre* ; *les uns, les au-*
tres, may be omitted, if the
sense is complete without
them.)
- Oneself, *pron. soi*, after preposi-
tions ; *se*, with verbs.
- Only, *adv. seulement.*

In construction of verbs, *ne* be-
fore the verb, and *que* before
the word to which *only*,
nothing but, would apply ;
as—We are only poor peo-
ple, *nous ne sommes que de*
 pauvres gens.

we have had nothing but ac-
cidents in our journey, *nous*
n'avons eu que des contre-
temps en notre voyage.

Only, *adj. unique.*

Open, *v. a. ouvrir.*

— *v. n. s'ouvrir.*

— *adj. and part. ouvert, franc,*

Opinion, *n. opinion, f.* [*che.*

Opportunity, *n. occasion, f.*

Or, *conj. ou.*

Orphan, *n. orphelin, m. line, f.*

Other, *adj. autre.*

Others, *pron. les autres* ; *autrui.*

Otherwise, *adv. autrement.*

Ought, *v. aux. conditional of de-*
voir,—page 80 : (parts of
falloir,—p. 93.)

Our, *adj. notre, pl. nos.*

Ours, *pron. le, la nôtre, les nôtres.*

Ourselves, *pron. nous, nous-mêmes.*

Over, *prep. sur.*

— *adv. dessus, pardessus.*

— heat oneself, *s'échauffer.*

— reached, *part. surpris.*

— rule, *v. a. dominer.*

Own, *v. a. convenir de.*

— (*adjunct.*) *propre.*

Ox, *n. bœuf, m.*

P.

Pagan, *adj. païen, enne.*

Pain, *n. douleur, f.*

Paint, *v. a. peindre.*

Painter, *n. peintre, m.*

Pane, *n. vitre, f.*

Paper, *n. papier*, *m.*
 Parcel, *n. paquet*, *m.*
 Parents, *n. parents*, *m.*
 (more frequently, *père et mère*.)
 Parrot, *n. perroquet*, *m.*
 Part, *n. partie*, *f.*
 Party, *n. réunion*, *f.*
 evening party, *soirée*.
 pleasure party, *partie de plaisir*.
 political party, *parti*, *m.*
 Pass, *v. a. and n. passer*.
 — *n. défilé*, *m. col*, *m.*
 Passage, *n. passage*, *m.*
 Past, *p. passé*.
 Patience, *n. patience*, *f.*
 Pay, *v. a. payer*. [*paie*, *f.*
 — *n. (for soldiers,) solde*, *f.*
 — (civil,) *appointements*, *m. pl.*
 Peace, *n. paix*, *f.*
 Peasant, *n. paysan*, *m. anne*, *f.*
 People, *s. peuple*, *m.* [*gens*, *m.*
 (plural of persons,) *personnes*, *f.*
 Pen, *n. plume*, *f.*
 Pencil, *n. crayon*, *m.*
 Penknife, *n. canif*, *m.*
 Pepper, *n. poivre*, *m.*
 Perform, *v. a. and n. faire*.
 — to act, *jouer*.
 Performance, *n. spectacle*, *m. re-*
présentation, *f.*
 Perhaps, *adv. peut-être*.
 Person, *n. personne*, *f.*
 Persuasive, *adj. persuasif, ive* ;
engageant.
 Picture, *n. tableau*, *m.*
 Pillar, *n. pilier*, *m. colonne*, *f.*
 Pin, *n. épingle*, *f.*
 Pistol, *n. pistolet*, *m.*
 Place, *n. lieu*, *m. endroit*, *m.*
place, *f.*
 in your, in his, &c. place, *à*
votre, à sa...place.
 Plain, *n. plaine*, *f.*
 Plan, *n. plan*, *m. projet*, *m.*
 Planet, *n. planète*, *f.*
 Plant, *n. plante*, *f.*

Play, *v. jouer*.
 Pleasant, *adj. aimable, agréable*.
 Please, *v. a. plaire*, *v. n. governs*
 Plenty, *n. abondance*, *f.* [*dative*.
 — *assez, abondamment, beau-*
 Poet, *n. poète*, *m.* [*coup de, adv.*
 Poetry, *n. poésie*, *f.*
 Point, *n. point*, *m. pointe*, *f.*
 on the point of, *sur le point de*.
 Poison, *n. poison*, *m.*
 — *v. empoisonner*.
 Polish, *adj. Polonais*.
 Polish, *v. a. polir*.
 Polite, *adj. poli*.
 Pomatum, *n. pommade*, *f.*
 Poor, *adj. pauvre*.
 — *n. les pauvres*, *m. pl.*
 Possess, *v. posséder*.
 Possession, *n. possession*, *f.*
pl. biens, *m. pl.*
 Posterity, *n. postérité*, *f.*
 Postman, *n. facteur*, *m.*
 Pot, *n. pot*, *m.*
 Potatoe, *n. pomme de terre*, *f.*
 Pound, *n. livre*, *f.*
 Powder, *n. poudre*, *f.*
 Powerful, *adj. puissant*.
 Praise, *n. louange*, *f. éloges*, *m. pl.*
 — *v. a. louer*.
 Pray, *v. a. and n. prier*.
 Present, *adj. présent*.
 of time, *actuel, elle*.
 Present, *n. présent*, *m. cadeau*,
 — *v. a. présenter*. [*m.*
 President, *n. président*, *m.*
 Pretence, *n. semblant*, *m.*
 Pretty, *adj. joli*.
 Pretty well, *adv. assez bien*.
 Prey, *n. proie*, *f.*
 Prince, *n. prince*, *m.*
 Prisoner, *n. prisonnier*.
 Prize, *n. prix*, *m.*
 Proceed, *v. n. marcher, s'avancer*.
 Proof, *n. preuve*, *f.*
 Proper, *adj. convenable, comme il*
faut, bien.

Properly, *adv. convenablement.*
 Property, *n. propriété, f. bien, m.*
 Propriety, *n. bienséance, f. con-*
Prose, n. prose, f. [venance, f.
 Protestant, *n. and adj. protestant.*
 Prove, *v. a. prouver.*
 Provisions, *n. pl. vivres, m. pl.*
 Pull, *tirer.*
 — out, *arracher.*
 Punctually, *adv. précis, précise,*
 Punish, *v. a. punir. [adj.*
 Punishment, *n. punition, f. châti-*
ment, m.
 — (school,) *pensum, m.*
 Pupil, *n. élève, m.*
 — of eye, *prunelle, f.*
 Puppy, *n. jeune chien.*
 Pure, *adj. pur.*
 Pursue, *v. a. poursuivre.*
 Pursuit, *n. poursuite, f.*
 study, *occupation, f. étude, f.*
 Put, *v. a. mettre.*
 — back, *back again, remettre.*
 — off, *remettre.*
 — out, *déranger.*
 — down (materially,) *déposer ;*
 (morally,) *supprimer.*
 — in a rage, *mettre en colère,*
 fâcher.

Q.

Quarter ($\frac{1}{4}$), *quart ; place, quartier.*
 Queen, *n. reine, f.*
 Question, *n. question, f.*
 Quick, *adj. vif, ve ; prompt.*
 Quicksilver, *n. vifargent, m.*
 Quiet, *adj. tranquille.*
 Quiver, *v. n. frémir.*
 — *n. carquois, m.*

R.

Rage, *n. colère, f.*
 Rain, *n. pluie, f.*
 Rapid, *adj. rapide.*

Rapidity, *n. rapidité, f.*
 Rapidly, *adv. rapidement.*
 Rare, *adj. rare.*
 Rascal, *n. gredin, m. coquin, m.*
 maraud, m. drôle, m.
 Rash, *adj. téméraire.*
 Rashness, *n. témérité, f. étour-*
 derie, f.
 Rat, *n. rat, m.*
 Ravenous, *adj. dévorant.*
 Raw, *adj. cru.*
 Reach, *v. a. atteindre, arriver à.*
 Read, *v. a. and n. lire.*
 Ready, *adj. prêt.*
 Real, *adj. vrai, réel, elle.*
 Receive, *v. a. recevoir.*
 Recent, *adj. récent.*
 Recently, *adv. récemment.*
 Recluse, *n. solitaire, m.*
 Recognise, *v. a. reconnaître, re-*
 mettre.
 Recollect, *v. a. se souvenir, v. n.*
 gov. gen. se rappeler, v. a.
 remettre, v. a.
 Recollection, *n. souvenir, m.*
 Reconquer, *v. a. reconquérir.*
 Recourse, *n. recours, m.*
 to have recourse, *recourir à.*
 Recover, *v. a. recouvrer.*
 — *v. n. se remettre, revenir,*
 guérir.
 Reflect, *v. n. and a. réfléchir.*
 — upon, *réjaillir sur.*
 Refuse, *v. a. refuser.*
 Regiment, *n. régiment, m.*
 Reinforce, *v. n. renforcer.*
 Reinforcements, *n. renforts, m.*
 Reject, *v. a. rejeter.*
 Rejoice, *v. n. se réjouir de....*
 Relation, *n. (account, &c.) re-*
 lation, f. (consang.) parent, m.
 parente, f.
 Relentlessly, *adv. sans relâche.*
 Remain, *v. n. rester.*
 there remains, or remain, *il*
 reste.

Remember, *v. a. se souvenir, v. n.*
(governs gen.) I remember
you, *je me souviens de vous.*
I remember it, *je m'en souviens ;*
se rappeler, v. a.
I remember that event, *je me*
rappelle cet événement.
I remember it, *je me le rappelle.*
Repeat, *v. a. répéter.*
Repent, *v. a. se repentir, v. n.*
(gov. gen.) he repents his
rashness, *il se repent de*
sa témérité. [repent-il pas ?
does he not repent it ? *ne s'en*
Reply, *v. n. répliquer.*
Require, *v. a. requérir. [page 93.*
impers. it requires, *il faut,*
Reserve, *n. réserve, f. retenue, f.*
— *v. a. réserver.*
Resist, *v. n. résister, gov. dat.*
Resound, *v. n. retentir, résonner.*
Rest, *v. n. se reposer.*
— *n. repos, m.*
Resume, *v. a. reprendre.*
Retire, *v. n. se retirer.*
Return, *v. n. revenir.*
— *v. a. rendre.*
Review, *n. revue, f.*
Revolution, *n. révolution.*
Reward, *n. récompense, f.*
Rich, *adj. riche.*
— *n. les riches, m. pl.*
Right, *adj. bon bonne ; vrai ;*
qu'il faut.
— *adv. bien, comme il faut.*
to be right, *avoir raison.*
to do right, *faire bien.*
(dexter,) *droit.*
— *n. droite.*
to the right, *à droite.*
Rise, *v. n. se lever.*
River, *n. fleuve, m. rivière, f.*
Road, *n. chemin, m. route, f.*
Rob, *v. a. and n. voler.*
Robber, *n. voleur, m.*
Rogue, *n. fripon, m. drôle, m.*

Roman, *adj. and n. Romain, aine.*
Room, *n. chambre, f.*
space, place, f.
Rose, *n. rose, f.*
Rough (in manner,) *grossier.*
(sensation,) *raboteux, se ; inégal,*
Round, *adj. rond. [après.*
— *prep. autour de.*
Row, *n. bruit, m. bagarre, f.*
Ruffian, *n. forcené, m.*
Ruin, *n. ruine, f.*
Ruinous, *adj. ruineux.*
Rule, *n. règle, f.*
Run, *v. n. courir.*
— *up, accourir.*

S.

Sad, *adj. triste.*
Salt, *n. sel, m.*
Satisfied, *adj. content.*
to be satisfied, *v. n. se contenter.*
Save, *v. a. sauver.*
— (strength,) *ménager.*
Scale, *v. a. gravir.*
Scandal, *n. médisance, f.*
to talk scandal, *médire.*
Scarce, *adj. rare.*
Scarlet, *adj. écarlate.*
School, *n. école, f.*
Scout, *n. éclaireur, m.*
Scrupulous, *adj. scrupuleux.*
Scythe, *n. faux.*
Sea, *n. mer, f.*
Search, *v. a. visiter, fouiller.*
Secrecy, *n. secret, m.*
Secret, *adj. secret.*
Secure, *adj. assuré, sûr.*
— *v. a. assurer, arrêter.*
See, *v. a. voir.*
— *again, revoir.*
Seek, *v. a. chercher.*
Self, *adj. propre.*
— *adv. même.*
Sell, *v. a. vendre.*
Semblance, *n. semblant, m.*

- Send, *v. a.* *envoyer*.
 — back, *renvoyer*.
 — away, *chasser*.
 — for, *mander, envoyer, chercher*.
 Sense, *n.* *bon sens, m.*
 Senseless, *adj.* *insensé*.
 Sentence, *n.* (gram.) *phrase, f.*
 (law) *sentence, f.*
 Sentiment, *n.* *sentiment, m.*
 Servant, *n.* *domestique, m.*
 maid-servant, *servants, f.*
 term of etiquette, *serveur, m.*
 servante, *f.*
 Set, *v. a.* *ranger*. [*en route*.
 — *v. n.* set-off, set-out, *se mettre*
 set out again, *se remettre en*
route.
 set about, *se mettre, s'y prendre*.
 Settle, *v. a.* *arranger*.
 — *v. n.* *s'établir*.
 Shade, *n.* *ombre, f.*
 in the shade, *à l'ombre*.
 Shall, *aux.* sign of future.
 Sham, *adj.* *faux, sse; simulé*.
 Shark, *n.* *requin, m.*
 Sharp, *adj.* *vif, ve; aigu*.
 Sheath, *n.* *fourreau, m. gaine, f.*
 Shed (cow.) *étable, f.*
 Shine, *v. n.* *briller*.
 Sheep, *n.* *mouton, m.*
 Shining, *adj.* *luisant, brillant*.
 Ship, *n.* *navire, m. bâtiment, m.*
 Shore, *n.* *bord, m. rivage, m.*
 Short, *adj.* *court, petit*.
 Shot, *n.* *coup, m.*
 (projectile,) *plomb, m.*
 (cannon,) *boulet, m.*
 Should, *aux.* see *devoir*,—*p. 80*.
 Shout, *v. n.* *crier*.
 Show, *v. a.* *montrer*.
 Shrewd, *adj.* *rusé, fin*.
 Shudder, *v. n.* *frémir*.
 Shut, *v. a.* *fermer*.
 — *part.* *fermé*.
 Side, *n.* *côté, m.*
 Sight, *n.* *spectacle, m.*
 Significant, *adj.* *signifiant*.
 Silk, *n.* *soie, f.*
 Sin, *n.* *péché, m.*
 — *v.* *pécher*.
 Since, *adv. and prep.* *depuis*.
 Sing, *v. n. and a.* *chanter*.
 Sinner, *n.* *pécheur, m. -eresse, f.*
 Sir, *n.* *Monsieur, m.*
 Sister, *n.* *sœur, f.*
 Situation, *n.* *position, f. place, f.*
emploi, m.
 Six, *num. adj.* *six*.
 six o'clock, *six heures*.
 Skill, *n.* *adresse, f.*
 Sky, *n.* *ciel, m.*
 Sleeve, *n.* *manche, f.*
 Slight, *adj.* *léger*.
 Slightest, *le moindre*.
 Slipper, *n.* *pantoufle, f.*
 Slow, *adj.* *lent*.
 to find it slow, *s'ennuyer*.
 Slower, *plus lentement*.
 Slowly, *adv.* *lentement*.
 Sly, *adj.* *sournois, rusé, malin*.
 Small, *adj.* *petit*.
 Smell, *v. a. and n.* *sentir*.
 — *n.* *odeur, f.*
 Smoke, *n.* *fumée*.
 — *v. a. and n.* *fumer*.
 Snow, *n.* *neige, f.*
 So, *adv.* (thus,) *ainsi, de cette*
manière, comme cela.
 — *adv. of comparison, si, aussi*.
 — much, tant. [*gov. subj.*
 so conj.—so that..., *afin que...*
 so as to...*afin de...* gov. inf.
 So, *pers. pron.* *le*.
 I do so, *je le fais*.
 I think so, *je le crois*.
 Soap, *n.* *savon, m.*
 Soaked, *part.* *trempé*.
 Society, *n.* *société, f.*
 Soft, *adj.* *doux, ce*.
 Sold, *part.* *vendu*.
 Soldier, *n.* *soldat, m. militaire, m.*
 Soldierly, *n.* *la force armée; la*
milice, f.
 Sole, *n.* (of feet,) *plante, f.*

Solemn, *adj.* solennel, *elle*.

Solicitor, *n.* avoué.

Solve, *v. a.* résoudre.

Some, *adj.* quelques.

generally translated by the
partitive article, *du, de la,*
des,—page 11.

Some,—as some people, *les uns*.

Some, as a personal pronoun, of
it, of them, *en*.

Somewhere, *adv.* quelque-part.

— else, *ailleurs*.

Soon, *adv.* tôt, bientôt. [*que*]

as soon as, aussitôt que, dès

Sorrowful, *adj.* triste, douloureux.

Sort, *n.* sorte, *f.*

Soup, *n.* soupe, *f.* potage, *m.*

Space, *n.* espace, *m.*

Spain, *n. pr.* Espagne, *f.*

Spanish, *adj.* and *n.* Espagnol.

Spare, *v. a.* épargner, ménager.

Spark, *n.* étincelle, *f.*

Speak, *v. n.* parler.

Speech, *n.* la parole, *f.* un dis-

Spend, *v. a.* dépenser. [*cours, m.*

— time, passer.

Spirit, *n.* esprit, *m.*

Spirits, vivacité, *f.*

Splendid, *adj.* splendide, superbe,

Split, *v. a.* fendre. [*magnifique.*

— part. fendu.

Spoil, *v. a.* gâter.

to despoil, dépouiller.

Spoilt, part. gâté.

Spot, *n.* tâche, *f.*

place, endroit, *m.* lieux, *m. pl.*

Squadron, *n.* (mil.) escadron, *m.*

— (nav.) escadre, *f.*

Squander, *v. a.* manger, dépenser,

dissiper, gaspiller. [*se trouver.*

Stand, *v. n.* être debout, se tenir,

stand firm, tenir bon.

Star, *n.* étoile, *f.*

Start, *v. n.* partir.

— off again, repartir.

Steady, *adj.* solide, *adv.* ferme.

Step, *n.* pas, *m.* marche, *f.* dé-

Stick, *n.* bâton, *m.* [*marche, f.*

Stifling, *adj.* étouffant.

Still, *adj.* silencieux, tranquille.

— *adv.* toujours, encore.

Stone, *n.* pierre, *f.*

Stone (of fruit,) noyau, *m.*

Storm, *n.* orage, *m.*

Stormy, *adj.* orageux, *se.*

Story, *n.* histoire, *f.* conte, *m.*

Straight, *adj.* droit.

— on, *adv.* tout droit.

Stream, *n.* ruisseau, *m.* courant, *m.*

Street, *n.* rue, *f.*

Strength, *n.* force, *f.*

Stretch, *v. a.* tendre.

— *v. n.* s'étendre.

Strike, *v. a.* frapper.

— hours, sonner.

Stupid, *adj.* bête.

Subject, *n.* and *adj.* sujet, *ette*.

— *v. a.* soumettre.

Submit, *v. n.* se soumettre.

Succeed, *v. n.* (be successful,)

réussir.

— (follow,) succéder, *v. n.*

governs dative.

Success, *n.* succès, *m.*

Successful, *adj.* heureux, *se.*

Succour, *v. a.* secourir.

Sudden, *adj.* subit, soudain.

Suddenly, (on a sudden,) *adv.*

soudain, tout à coup.

Suffer, *v. n.* and *a.* souffrir.

Suffering, *n.* souffrance, *f.*

Sugar, *n.* sucre, *m.*

Suit, *v. n.* convenir.

Summer, *n.* été, *m.*

Sun, *n.* soleil, *m.*

Sup, *v. n.* souper, *m.*

Supper, *n.* souper, *m.*

Supply, *v. a.* pourvoir.

— *v. n.* pourvoir à...

— *n.* provision, *f.*

Support, *v. a.* soutenir.

— *n.* soutien, *m.*

Suppose, *v. a. supposer, croire.*
 Surprise, *v. a. surprendre.*
 — *n. surprise, f.*
 Surprising, *part. adj. surprenant.*
 Survive, *v. n. survivre à.*
 Suspect, *v. a. se douter, v. n.*
 gov. gen. soupçonner, v. a.
 Swallow, *v. avaler.*
 — *n. hirondelle, f.*
 Swamp, *n. marécage, m.*
 Sway, *n. empire, m.*
 Swear, *v. a. and n. jurer.*
 Swede, *adj. Suédois.*
 Sweet, *adj. doux, ce; sucré.*
 — *smelling, odorant.*
 Swim, *v. n. nager.*
 Swiss, *adj. Suisse.*
 Sword, *n. épée, f.*

T.

Table, *n. table, f.*
 Take, *v. a. prendre.*
 (to lead,) conduire, mener.
 to take in, attraper.
 to take a walk, faire une promenade.
 to take refuge, se réfugier.
 to take after, tenir de.
 to take away (of things,) enlever.
 — *(of persons,) emmener.*
 Talk, *v. n. and a. parler.*
 Tall, *adj. haut, grand.*
 Taste, *n. goût, m.*
 Tea, *n. thé, m.*
 Teach, *v. a. enseigner.*
 Tear, *n. larme, f.*
 Tear, *v. a. déchirer.*
 Tease, *v. a. tourmenter.*
 Teased, *part. taquiné.*
 Tell, *v. n. and a. dire, v. n.*
 Temple, *n. temple, m.*
 Ten, *num. adj. dix.*

Territory, *n. terres, f. pl. terri-*
 Than, *conj. que.* [*toire, m.*
 (after plus and moins, as ad-
 verbs of quantity, de.)
 Thank, *v. a. remercier.*
 thank you! merci!
 That, *adj. dem. ce, cet, cette,—*
 page 27.
 That, *pron. neut. cela.*
 if referring to a defined object,
 celui, celle,—page 30.
 that, which, or what, ce qui,
 nom. ce que, acc.
 that which displeases me, ce
 qui me déplaît.
 that which I command, ce que
 that is..., voilà. [*j'ordonne.*
 The, *art. def. le, la, les,—p. 10.*
 Their, *pron. adj. leur,—p. 26.*
 Theirs, *poss. pron. le leur,—p. 29.*
 Them, *per. pron. after verbs, les;*
 after prep. eux, elles,—p. 29.
 Then, *adv. alors.*
 Then, *interj. donc.*
 There, *adv. là.*
 in the body of a sentence, or
 after the imperative, y.
 there is, voilà.
 There, *pron. nominative to im-*
 personal verbs, il.
 there is, or are, il y a. [reste.
 there remains, or remain, il
 These, *adj. dem. ces,—p. 27.*
 — *pron. dem. ceux-ci, celles-ci,*
 page 29.
 They, *per. pron. nom. to verb, ils,*
 elles,—page 29.
 Thick, *adj. épais, sse.*
 Thin, *adj. maigre.*
 Thing, *n. chose, f.*
 Think, *v. n. penser.*
 to think of, bear in mind, pen-
 ser à, songer à.
 to think, or have an opinion
 about, penser de.
 to fancy, croire.

Thirst, *n. soif, f.*
 This, *dem. adj. ce,—p. 27.*
 — *pron. dem. neut. ceci.*
 in reference to defined objects,
celui, &c.—p. 30.
 this is, *voici.*
 Thomas, *n. pr. Thomas.*
 Those, *dem. adj. ces,—p. 27.*
 — *dem. pron. ceux, celles,—*
page 30.
 Thought, *n. pensée, f.*
 Thousand, *adj. num. mille.*
 — *n. pl. des milliers.*
 Thread, *n. fil, m.*
 Threaten, *v. a. menacer.*
 Three, *num. adj. trois.*
 Throw, *v. a. jeter.*
 Thunder, *n. tonnerre, m.*
 — *v. n. tonner.*
 Thus, *adv. ainsi.*
 Tie, *v. a. lier, nouer.*
 to tie knots, make ties, *faire*
des nœuds.
 Tight, *adj. and adv. ferme.*
 Till, *conj. en attendant que, jus-*
qu'à ce que.
 Time, *n. temps.*
 a time, three times, &c., *une*
fois, trois fois, &c.
 time of day, *heure.*
 Tiny, *adj. mignon, onne; menu.*
 Tip, *n. pointe, f.*
 — *n. (of money,) pourboire, m*
 Tire, *v. n. fatiguer, lasser.*
 Tired, *part. fatigué.*
 — *adj. las, sse.*
 Tiresome, *adj. ennuyeux, se;*
fâcheux, se.
 Title, *n. titre, m.*
 To, *prep. à, (sometimes before*
verbs, de.)
 to-day, *aujourd'hui.*
 Together, *adv. ensemble.*
 Too, *adv. trop.*
 too much, too many, *trop.*
 too little, *trop peu.* Also *auss.*

Tooth, *n. dent, f.*
 Top, *n. sommet, m. faite, m.*
 Torment, *n. tourment, m.*
 — *v. a. tourmenter.*
 Tower, *n. tour, f.*
 Town, *n. ville, f.*
 Track, *n. trace, f. voie, f. sen-*
tier, m.
 Train, *n. train, m. convoi, m.*
 Transfer, *v. a. transmettre.*
 Translate, *v. a. traduire.*
 Travel, *v. n. voyager.*
 Travels, *n. pl. voyages, m.*
 Tree, *n. arbre, m.*
 Trivial, *adj. léger, insignifiant.*
 Trouble, *n. peine, f.*
 to take the trouble, *se donner*
la peine, prendre la peine.
 Trouble, *v. a. (mind,) vexer,*
tourmenter.
 — *(body,) déranger.*
 True, *adj. vrai.*
 Trumpery, *adj. banal.*
 Trust, *v. a. se fier, v. n. gov. dat.*
 I trust that man, *je me fie à*
cet homme.
 I trust you, *je me fie à vous;*
 — *it, je m'y fie.*
 Truth, *n. vérité, f.*
 Try, *v. a. essayer.*
 — *v. n. tâcher.*
 to try for prizes, *concourir.*
 Tub, *n. tonneau, m.*
 Twelve, *num. adj. douze.*
 twelve o'clock day, *midi.*
 twelve o'clock night, *minuit.*
 Twice, *adv. deux fois.*
 Twinkling, *n. lustre, m. scintille-*
ment, m.
 Two, *num. adj. deux.*

U.

Ugly, *adj. laid, vilain.*
 Umbrella, *n. parapluie, m.*

Understand, *v. a. comprendre.*
understand one another, *s'entendre.*

to understand how to do, *s'entendre à faire.*

Unfathomable, *adj. insondable.*

Unfortunate, *adj. malheureux, se; infortuné.*

an unfortunate person, *un malheureux, reuse.*

Unhappy, *triste, malheureux.*

an unhappy wretch, *un misér-*

Unite, *v. a. unir, réunir.* [able.
— *v. n. se réunir.*

Unnoticed, *adj. ignoré.*

Unprepared, *adj. dépourvu.*

— *adv. au dépourvu.*

Until, *conj. en attendant que, jusqu'à ce que, gov. subj.*

Untiring, *adj. infatigable, constant.*

Up, *adj. (arisen,) levé, debout, adv.*

— *adv. depends upon construction of sentence.*

to go up, *monter, remonter.*

up, as up train, *train montant.*

up the stream, *en amont.*

up there, *là haut.*

Us, *pron. per. nous, dat. & acc.*

Use, *v. a. se servir, v. n. governs genitive.* [ses livres.

I use his books, *je me sers de*
he does not use it, or them, *il ne s'en sert pas.*

the things I use, *les choses dont je me sers.*

Use, *n. usage, m.*

to be of use, *servir.*

what is the use of that—of speaking? *à quoi sert cela—à quoi sert de parler?*

to be of no use, *ne servir à rien.*

Used, *sign of imperfect tense.*

Useful, *adj. utile.*

Useless, *adj. inutile.*

Utmost, *adj. dernier.*

Utmost, *n. possible.*

Utter, *v. a. souffler, pousser.*

— *adj. achevé, outré.*

V.

Vain, *adj. vain.*

conceited, *vaniteux.*

in vain, *adv. vainement, inutilement.*

to do in vain, *avoir beau faire.*

it is in vain for you to speak,
vous avez beau parler.

Value, *n. valeur, f.*

Vast, *adj. vaste.*

Very, *adv. très, fort, bien.*

very well, *très-bien.*

very much, *beaucoup.*

(omit before superlatives
"very last, very best.")

Vessel, *n. vaisseau, m. vase, m.*

Viaduct, *n. viaduc, m.*

Victory, *n. victoire, f.*

Victorious, *adj. victorieux.*

Villain, *n. scélérat, m.*

Voice, *n. voix, f.*

Volunteer, *n. volontaire, m.*

W.

Waggon, *n. chariot, m.*

Wait, *v. n. attendre.*

wait for, *v. a. attendre.*

Walk, *v. n. marcher.*

— *n. promenade, f.*

take a walk, *faire une prom.*

Wall, *n. mur, m. muraille, f.*

Want, *n. besoin, m. misère, f.*

— *v. a. (wish for,) désirer, vouloir.*

to be in need of, *avoir besoin.*

to be without, *manquer de.*

War, *n. guerre, f.*
 Warlike, *adj. guerrier, ère.*
 Warm, *adj. chaud.*
 Warn, *v. a. avertir, prévenir.*
 Warning, *n. avertissement, m.*
 Warrior, *n. guerrier, m.*
 Watch, *n. montre, f.*
 (look-out,) *guet, m. garde, f.*
 — *v. a. veiller.*
 — *v. n. surveiller.*
 — (spy,) *v. a. guéter.*
 Watch-fire, *n. feu, m.*
 Water, *n. eau, f.*
 Wax, *n. cire, f.*
 Way, *n. voie, f. chemin, m.*
 way to do, *manière, f. moyen,*
 manner, façon, f. [m.]
 in this, that way, *ainsi, comme*
 Weak, *adj. faible. [cela.]*
 Wealth, *n. richesses, pl. f.*
 Week, *n. semaine, f.*
 Weep, *v. n. pleurer.*
 Weight, *n. poids, m.*
 Well, *adv. bien.*
 Well, *adj. (in health,) bien portant.*
 to be well, *se porter bien, or*
 être bien portant.
 Were, part of *to be*, see *être*,—
 page 41.
 were I, you, he, to....., *quand*
 with conditional,—pp. 153,
 163; in the same sense as
 even if.
 What, *adj. quel quelle,—p. 27.*
 — *relat. pron. interrog. que.*
 what does he want? *que veut-*
 il?
 if governed by a preposition,
 quoi; as,
 what do you complain of? *de*
 quoi vous plaignez-vous?
 what, in the sense of *that*
 which, ce qui, nom.; ce que,
 acc.; ce dont, gen.
 what puts him in a rage? *ce*
 qui le met en colère?

show me what you have got,
montrez-moi ce que vous
avez.
 what I complain of, *ce dont je*
me plains.
 what on earth? *que?*
 what on earth are you doing?
que faites-vous donc?
 what's the time? *quelle heure*
est-il? or, quelle est l'heure.
 What, *adv. how much? combien?*
 What, *interj. comment! eh quoi!*
 Whatever, *adj. quelque, que, gov.*
 subj.
 whatever novelties you ask
 for, *quelques nouveautés*
 que vous demandiez.
 Whatever, *indef. pron. quoi que.*
 whatever it be, *quoi que ce soit.*
 whatever happens, *quoi qu'il*
 arrive.
 whatever you do, *quoi que vous*
 fassiez.
 Whatever, *rel. pron. quel quelle,*
 &c. que.
 give me a room, whatever it
 be, *donnez-moi une cham-*
 bre, quelle qu'elle soit.
 Whatever, *adv. au monde, du*
 tout.
 Wheel, *n. roue.*
 — of clocks, *rouage, m.*
 When, *adv. quand.*
 Where, *adv. où.*
 Which, *adj. quel quelle, &c.—p. 27.*
 — *pron. relat. qui, que, &c.*
 with prepositions, *lequel, la-*
 quelle,—page 30.
 While, *n. la peine, f.*
 to be worth while, *en valoir*
 la peine.
 While, *] conj. pendant que; be-*
 Whilst, *f* *ore Eng. pres. part.*
 en, or tout en, gov. pres.
 part.
 White, *adj. blanc, che.*

Whiteness, *n.* *blancheur*, *f.*
 Whole, *adj.* *tout le, toute la, toutes les, toutes les; entier.*
 — *n.* *tout, m. ensemble, m.*
 Whom, *relat. pron. acc. que.*
 at the beginning of an interrogative sentence, *qui.*
 Whooping-cough, *n.* *coqueluche*, *f.*
 Whose, *rel. adj. dont, rel. pron.*
 the man whose house....., *l'homme dont la maison...*
 the man whose voice you like, *l'homme dont vous aimez la voix.*
 if a preposition governs whose in English, *de qui, du quel* are used; thus,
 to whose book do you allude? *au livre de qui faites-vous allusion?*
 the cat whose tail you trod on, *le chat sur la queue duquel vous avez marché.*
 Wicked, *adj.* *méchamment, mauvais.*
 Wild, *adj.* *sauvage.*
 Will, *v. a.* *vouloir*, sign of future.
 William, *n. pr.* *Guillaume.*
 Willing, *adj.* *volontaire.*
 to be willing, *le vouloir bien.*
 Willingly, *adv.* *volontiers.*
 Wind, *n.* *vent, m.*
 Window, *n.* *fenêtre, f.*
 Win, *v. a.* *remporter, valoir.*
 — *v. n.* *l'emporter.*
 Wine, *n.* *vin, m.*
 Wisdom, *n.* *sagesse, f.*
 Wise, *adj.* *sage.*
 Wish, *v. a.* *souhaiter.*
 — *n.* *désir, m. souhait, m.*
 With, *prep.* *avec, de.*
 Without, *prep.* *sans, gov. inf.*
 without my, his, &c. and poss. part. gov. subj.—p. 148.
 Woman, *n.* *femme, f.*

Wonderful, *adj.* *étonnant, merveilleux, euse.*
 Wood, *n.* *bois, m.*
 Woodman, *n.* *bucheron, m.*
 Word, *n.* *mot, m. parole, f.*
 Work, *n.* *travail, œuvre, f. ouvrage,*
 — *v. n.* *travailler.* [*m.*]
 Workman, *n.* *ouvrier, m.*
 Workwoman, *n.* *ouvrière, f.*
 World, *n.* *monde, m.*
 Worn, *part. usé, épuisé.*
 Worse, *adj.* *pire.*
 Worst, *adj.* *le pire.*
 Worth, *n.* *mérite, f.*
 — *adj.* *digne.*
 to be worth, *valoir.*
 worth while, *en valoir la peine.*
 Worthy, *adj.* *digne.*
 Write, *v. a. and n.* *écrire.*
 Wrong, *n.* *tort, m.*
 —*adj.* (no exact rendering) *faux, sse; mauvais.*
 to be wrong, *avoir tort.*
 to do wrong, *faire mal.*

Y.

Year, *n.* *an, m. année, f.*
 a-year, *par an.*
 Yes, *adv.* *oui.*
 after negative questions, *si.*
 Yesterday, *adv.* *hier.*
 Yonder, *adv.* *là-bas.*
 Young, *adj.* *jeune.*
 Young lady, *jeune demoiselle.*
 Your, *adj.* *votre, plur. vos,—p. 26.*
 Yours, *pron. poss. le votre, &c.*
 page 29.
 Yourselves, *pr. pers. vous.*
 Youth, *n.* *jeunesse, f.*
 a youth, *un adolescent.*

Just Published,

(CORRESPONDING WITH THIS VOLUME,)

Price 4s. 12mo. Cloth,

THE
ETON FIRST FRENCH READING BOOK,
BEING
AN ENTIRELY NEW ARRANGEMENT,
WITH CONSIDERABLE AUGMENTATION,
OF
"TARVER'S NEW METHOD,"
BY
H. AND F. TARVER,
FRENCH MASTERS AT ETON.

ETON: PUBLISHED BY E. P. WILLIAMS:
LONDON: SIMPKIN, MARSHALL, AND Co.

1
PRINTED BY E. P. WILLIAMS, ETON.



